10025. bbb. 22.

# COOK's VOYAGE

TO THE

# PACIFIC OCEAN.

VOL. III.

BRITISH MUSEUM

A

# VOYAGE

TO THE

# PACIFIC OCEAN;

Undertaken by Command of his MAJESTY,

FOR MAKING

# DISCOVERIES

IN THE

# NORTHERN HEMISPHERE:

Performed under the Direction of

Captains COOK, CLERKE, and GORE,

In the Years 1776, 1777, 1778, 1779, and 1780.

Being a copious, comprehenſive, and ſatisfactory Abridgement of the

# VOYAGE

WRITTEN BY

Captain JAMES COOK, F. R. S.

AND

Captain JAMES KING, LL. D. and F. R. S.

Illuſtrated with CUTS.

In FOUR VOLUMES.

VOL. III.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR JOHN STOCKDALE, SCATCHERD AND WHITAKER, JOHN FIELDING, AND JOHN HARDY.

MDCCLXXXIV.

BRITISH MUSEUM

# CONTENTS.

## BOOK IV.

TRANSACTIONS WITH THE NATIVES OF NORTH-AMERICA; DISCOVERIES ON THAT COAST AND THE EASTERN EXTREMITY OF ASIA, AND RETURN SOUTHWARD TO THE SANDWICH ISLANDS.

### CHAP. VIII.

*The Ships proceed to the Northward—The Isles of Oonella and Acootan—Oonemak—Plenty of Cod caught—Bristol River—Round Island—Calm Point—Mr. Williamson lands at Cape Newenham—His Report—Bristol Bay—Extent of it—Shoal Water—The Ships are obliged by the Shoals to return—Shoal Ness—Americans come off to our Ships—Their Behaviour, Dress, &c.—Point Upright—Death of Mr. Anderson—His Character—An Island named after him—Account of Sledge Island—King's Island—Cape Prince of Wales—Anchor in a large Bay on the Asiatic Coast.* Page 1

### CHAP. IX.

*Captain Cook lands at a Village—Interview with some of the Natives, the Tschutski—Their Weapons described—Their Persons—Ornaments—Dress—Winter Habitations—Summer Huts—Canoes—The Ships quit the Bay—Cross the Strait to the American Coast—Point Mulgrave—Appearance of a prodigious Mass of Ice—Icy Cape—The Sea, in a Manner, blocked up with Ice—Sea Horses killed, and made Use of as Provisions—Account of these Animals—The Ships almost surrounded with Ice—Cape Lisburne—Unsuccessful Attempts to get to the North through the Ice—Remarks on the Formation, &c. of this Ice—Arrival on the Asiatic Coast—Cape North.* 28

## CHAP. X.

*The Ships proceed along the Coaſt of Aſia—Burney's Iſland—Cape Serdze Kamen—Paſs the Eaſt Cape of Aſia—Deſcription of it—Bay of St. Lawrence—Two other Bays—Beering's Cape Tſchakotſkoi—Steer for the Coaſt of America—Cape Darby—Bald-Head—Captain Cook lands in ſearch of Wood and Water—Cape Denbigh—Some of the Natives come off to us—Beſborough Iſland—Captain Cook's Interview with a particular Family—Mr. King's Interview with the ſame Family—Supplies of Wood and Water—Mr. King ſent to examine the Coaſt—Viſits from the Natives—Their Huts—Produce of the Country—Mr. King's Report—Norton's Sound—Lunar Obſervations.* Page 53

## CHAP. XI.

*Stuart's Iſland diſcovered—Its Situation, Extent, &c.—Cape Stephens—Point Shallow-Water—Shoals on the Coaſt of North-America—Clerke's Iſland—Gore's Iſland—Pinnacle Iſland—The Reſolution ſprings a Leak—The Ships arrive at Oonalaſhka—Plentiful Supplies of Fiſh—Intercourſe with the Natives, and the Ruſſian Traders—Mr. Iſmyloff comes on board—Intelligence received from him—Two Charts produced by him—Account of the Iſlands viſited by the Ruſſians—Of their Settlement at Oonalaſhka—Deſcription of the Natives—Their Dreſs—Food—Manner of Building—Manufactures—Canoes—Implements for Hunting and Fiſhing—Fiſh and other Sea Animals—Water Fowls—Land-Birds—Quadrupeds—Vegetables—Stones—Repoſitories of the Dead—Diſeaſes—Reſemblance of the Inhabitants of this Side of America to the Eſquimaux and Greenlanders—Tides, Longitude, &c.* 80

CHAP.

## CHAP. XII.

*Departure from Samganoodha—Amoghta—An elevated Rock—Repaſs the Strait between Oonalaſhka and Oonella—Proceed to the South—One Man killed, and three or four wounded on board the Diſcovery—Mowee diſcovered—Viſits from the Natives—A Viſit from a Chief named Terreeoboo—Owhyhee, an Iſland, diſcovered—Ships ply to Windward—An Eclipſe of the Moon—Ship's Crew refuſe to taſte Sugar-Cane Beer—Comparative View of the Cordage in the Navy and Merchants Service—Eulogium on the Natives of Owhyhee—The Reſolution accompliſhes the Intention of getting to Windward of the Iſland—The Progreſs—Viſits from the Iſlanders—Joined by the Diſcovery—Mr. Bligh examines Karakakooa Bay—Multitudes of People—Anchor in the Bay.*

Page 123

---

# BOOK V.

## JOURNAL OF THE TRANSACTIONS ON RETURNING TO THE SANDWICH ISLANDS.

## CHAP. I.

*Karakakooa Bay deſcribed—Multitudes of the Natives ſurround the Ships—Deſpotic Authority of the Chiefs over the inferior People—A Viſit received from Koah—Deſcription of the Morai at Kakooa—Offering made to Captain Cook at the Morai—Mr. King erects Obſervatories—The Spot, on which they are ſituated, tabooed—Method of curing Meat in Tropical Climates—Society of Prieſts accidentally diſcovered—Their Munificence—Ceremony at the Reception of Captain Cook—Mean Artifice of Koah—Arrival of Terreeoboo*

*reeoboo—The Bay tabooed upon that Occaſion—Bring the Inhabitants to Obedience, by firing a Muſquet—Remarkable Ceremony—Viſit from Terreeoboo—Captain Cook returns it.* Page 147

## CHAP. II.

*The Civility and Hoſpitality of the Natives—Much addicted to thieving—Their Alacrity in conducting a Party of us up the Country—A Boxing-Match deſcribed—Death of William Watman, a Seaman—Attention of the Prieſts at his Funeral—Ceremony of the Natives at his Funeral—A Grave-Stone erected—The Rail and Images on the Morai purchaſed—The Natives very inquiſitive about our Departure—What they ſuppoſed to be the Object of our Voyage—Entertained by the Buffoonery of one of the Natives—Magnificent Preſents from Terreeoboo—The Natives regret our Departure—Wiſh to prevail on Mr. King to remain amongſt them—The Veſſels quit the Iſland—The Reſolution damaged in a Gale of Wind, and obliged to return.* 167

## CHAP. III.

*The Behaviour of the Iſlanders, on our Return to Karakakooa Bay, ſomewhat myſterious—A Theft committed on board the Diſcovery—The Thieves purſued up the Country by Captain Cook and Mr. King—Scuffle between the Natives and our People, in which Pareea receives a ſevere Blow—The Pinnace attacked and plundered—Crew obliged to quit her—Captain Cook's Reflections on the Occaſion—Attempt at the Obſervatory—The Diſcovery's Cutter ſtolen from the Buoy—Steps taken for its Recovery—Captain Cook goes on Shore to invite the King and his two Sons on board—His Wife and the Chiefs oppoſe his going—A*

—*A Conteſt ariſes on the Occaſion—Intelligence arrives of one of the Chiefs being killed by one of our People—The Conſequences—A Chief threatens Captain Cook, and is ſhot by him—A general Attack enſues—Death of Captain Cook—Account of his Services, and a Sketch of his Character.*

Page 185

CHAP. IV.

*Tranſactions at Owhyhee, ſubſequent to the Death of Captain Cook—Bravery of Mr. Phillips—The Iſlanders forced to retire—Situation of our Party at the Morai—The Natives annoy them with Stones—Attempt to ſtorm the Morai—A ſhort Truce—Our People quit the Morai—Pacific Meaſures determined on—Mr. King ſent to obtain a Conference with ſome of the Chiefs—His Interview with Koah—Contemptuous Behaviour of the Natives—Precautions taken by us—Two of the Iſlanders, in a Canoe, fired at, but not hurt—A Piece of Captain Cook's Fleſh brought us by one of them—Further Provocations from the Natives—Some great Guns fired at them—Our Watering Party harraſſed with Stones—The Village of Kakooa burned by our People—Bravery of one of the Natives—A Proceſſion, headed by Kaireekeea, who comes on board the Reſolution—The Bones of Captain Cook brought to us—They are committed to the Deep—The Ships leave Karakakooa Bay.*

206

CHAP. V.

*Leave Karakakooa Bay—In queſt of an Harbour on the South-Eaſt Side of Mowee—Driven to Leeward by the Current, and ſtrong eaſterly Winds—Paſs Tahoorowa—South-weſt Side of Mowee deſcribed—Proceed to Woahoo—The north-eaſt Coaſt of Woahoo deſcribed—Diſappointed in attempting to water—Proceed to Atooi—Anchor*

*in Wymoa Bay—The Natives not ſo friendly as before—The watering Party guarded by Marines—Inſolence of the Natives, who demanded a Hatchet for every Caſk of Water—The Iſlanders treat our People with Contempt—They ſteal Mr. King's Hanger out of his Hand—Their Inſolence at the Water-ſide—Are fired at by two Marines—One of them wounded—Viſit from the contending Chiefs—Anchor off Oneeheow—Departure.*
Page 244

## CHAP. VI.

*The Number, Names, and Situation, of the Sandwich Iſlands—Extent of Owhyhee, which is the largeſt of the whole Group—Account of its Diſtricts—Its Coaſts, and the adjacent Country, deſcribed—Snowy Mountains—Volcanic Appearances—Account of a Journey into the interior Parts of Owhyhee—Plantations—Account of a Hermit—The Country cultivated to the greateſt Advantage—A remarkable Cave—Deſcription of Mowee—Ranai—Morotoi—Tahoorowa—Woahoo—Atooi—Oneeheow—Oreehoua—Tahoora—Climate of the Sandwich Iſles—Winds—Currents—Tides—Quadrupeds—Amazing Supply of Pork procured by us—Birds—Vegetables.* 261

## CHAP. VII.

*General Account of the Sandwich Iſles continued—Origin of the Natives—Their Perſons deſcribed—Inſtances of Deformity—Pernicious Conſequences ariſing from the immoderate Uſe of the Ava—Population of theſe Iſlands—Diſpoſition and Manners of the Inhabitants—Reſtraints impoſed on their Women—Their Ingenuity and Docility—Mr. King's Reaſons for ſuppoſing that they are not Cannibals at preſent—Methods of wearing their Hair—Various Ornaments—Dreſs of the Men—*
*Feathered*

*Feathered Cloaks and Helmets—Dreſs of the Women—A beautiful Kind of Ruff deſcribed—Other Ornaments—Villages—Houſes—Food—Occupations—Diverſions—Their Fondneſs for Gaming—Aſtoniſhing Dexterity in Swimming—Canoes—Arts and Manufactures—Mode of painting Cloth—Beauty of their Mats—Their Fiſhing-Hooks—Cordage—Various Uſes of Gourd-Shells—Salt-Pans—Weapons.* Page 288

## CHAP. VIII.

*Continuation of the Account of the Sandwich Iſlands—Diviſion of the People into three Claſſes—Superior Power of the Eree-taboo—Genealogical Account of the Kings of Owyhee and Mowee—Authority of the Erees—Tyranny of Pareea, exerciſed on an inferior Chief—Puniſhment of Offences—Account of their Religion—Society of Prieſts—The Orono—Idols—Eatooas of deceaſed Chiefs—Religious Ceremonies, Chantings, &c. previous to the drinking of Ava—Human Sacrifices very frequent among them—Religious Cuſtom of knocking out the Fore-Teeth—Their Ideas of a future State—Particular Explanation of the Word Taboo—Marriages—Remarkable Inſtance of Jealouſy—Funeral Ceremonies at the Death of an old Chief, &c.* 332

# BOOK VI.

TRANSACTIONS IN A SECOND EXPEDITION TO THE NORTH, BY THE WAY OF KAMTSCHATKA, AND IN RETURNING HOME, BY THE WAY OF CANTON, AND THE CAPE OF GOOD HOPE.

## CHAP. I.

*Quit Oneeheow—Unſucceſsful Attempt to diſcover Modoopapappa—Steer for Awatſka Bay—See vaſt Quan-*

*Quantities of Oceanic Birds—Prepare for a cold Climate—Seamen require directing like Children—Sudden Change of Climate—The leaking of the Reſolution occaſions great Diſtreſs—See the Coaſt of Kamtſchatka—Continued Showers of Sleet, and great Severity of Weather—Loſe Sight of the Diſcovery—The Reſolution enters Awatſka Bay—With ſome Difficulty diſcover the Town of St. Peter and St. Paul—Party ſent aſhore—Avoided by Inhabitants on a Sledge—Their Reception by the Commander of the Port—Diſpatches to the Commander at Bolcheretſk—Arrival of the Diſcovery in the Bay—Return of the Meſſenger—Curious Mode of Travelling—Viſit from a Ruſſian Merchant, and a German Servant.* Page 339

## CHAP. II.

*Stores and Proviſions extremely ſcarce at St. Peter and St. Paul—Exorbitant Demands of a Merchant—A Party diſpatched to Bolcheretſk in purſuit of Stores and Proviſions—Proceed up the River Awatſka—Paſs the Night in a Marquée on the River-ſide—Civility and Hoſpitality of the Town of Karatchin—Dreſſes of the Kamtſchadales—Proſecute our Journey on Sledges—Curious Account of that Mode of travelling—Arrive at Natcheekin—Remarkable hot Spring there—Embark on the Bolchoireka River—Arrival at the Capital—Formal Proceſſion into that Town—Generoſity and Hoſpitality of Major Behm, Commander of the Garriſon—Bolcheretſk deſcribed—Preſents received from the Major—Entertainments of Dancing—Very affecting Departure from Bolcheretſk—Return to the Ships—Remarkable Inſtance of Generoſity in the Sailors—Major Behm carries Diſpatches to Peterſburgh—His Departure, and extraordinary Character.* 366

A VOY-

A

# VOYAGE

TO THE

# PACIFIC OCEAN.

## BOOK IV.

TRANSACTIONS WITH THE NATIVES OF NORTH-AMERICA; DISCOVERIES ON THAT COAST AND THE EASTERN EXTREMITY OF ASIA, AND RETURN SOUTHWARD TO THE SANDWICH ISLANDS.

---

## CHAP. VIII.

*The Ships proceed to the Northward—The Isles of Oonella and Acootan—Oonemak—Plenty of Cod caught—Bristol River—Round Island—Calm Point—Mr. Williamson lands at Cape Newenham—His Report—Bristol Bay—Extent of it—Shoal Water—The Ships are obliged by the Shoals to return—Shoal Ness—Americans come off to our Ships—Their Behaviour, Dress, &c.—Point Upright—Death of Mr. Anderson—His Character—An Island named after him—Account of Sledge Island—King's Island—Cape Prince of Wales—Anchor in a large Bay on the Asiatic Coast.*

ON the 2d of July, we steered from Samganoodha, with a gentle breeze at south-south-east, to the northward, and met with nothing to ob-

ſtruct us in that courſe. For, on the one ſide, the Iſle of Oonalaſhka trended ſouth-weſt; and, on the other, no land was viſible in a direction more northerly than north-eaſt; all which land was a continuation of the ſame groupe of iſlands that we had fallen in with on the 25th of the preceding month. That which is ſituated before Samganoodha, and conſtitutes the north-eaſtern ſide of the paſſage through which we came, is denominated Oonella, and its circumference is about ſeven leagues. Another iſland, lying to the north-eaſtward of it, bears the name of Acootan; it is conſiderably ſuperior in ſize to Oonella, and has in it ſome very lofty mountains, which were, at this time, covered with ſnow. It appeared, that we might have paſſed with great ſafety between theſe two iſlands and the continent, whoſe ſouth-weſtern point opened off the north-eaſtern point of Acootan, and proved to be the ſame point of land that we had diſcerned when we left the coaſt of the continent, the 25th of June, to go without the iſlands. It is termed Oonemak by the natives, and is ſituate in the longitude of 192° 30′ eaſt, and in the latitude of 54° 30′ north. Over the cape, which, of itſelf, is high land, there is a round elevated mountain, at preſent covered with ſnow. This mountain bore eaſt 2° north, at ſix o'clock in the afternoon; and, two hours afterwards, no

land was to be ſeen. Concluding, therefore, that the coaſt of the continent had now inclined to the north-eaſtward, we ſteered the ſame courſe, till one o'clock the following morning, when the watch ſtationed upon deck imagined they ſaw land ahead. Upon this we wore, and, for the ſpace of about two hours, ſtood towards the ſouth-weſt; after which we reſumed our courſe to the eaſt-north-eaſt. At ſix we diſcovered land a-head, at the diſtance of about five leagues, bearing ſouth-eaſt. As we advanced we deſcried more and more land, the whole of which was connected. At twelve o'clock, we obſerved that it extended from ſouth-ſouth-weſt to eaſt, the part neareſt to us being five or ſix leagues diſtant. Our longitude, at this time, was 195° 18′ eaſt, and our latitude 55° 21′ north. At ſix in the afternoon, we ſounded, and found a bottom of black ſand at the depth of forty-eight fathoms. We were now four leagues from the land; and the eaſtern part in ſight was in the direction of eaſt-ſouth-eaſt, appearing as an elevated round hummock.

On Saturday the 4th, at eight o'clock in the morning, we ſaw the coaſt from ſouth-ſouth-weſt, and eaſt by ſouth; and, at intervals, we could diſcern high land, covered with ſnow, behind it. Not long after we had a calm; and being in thirty fathoms water, we caught, with hook and line, a good number of excellent cod. At twelve

we had an eaſterly breeze and clear weather; at which time we found ourſelves about ſix leagues from the land, which extended from ſouth by weſt to eaſt by ſouth; and the hummock, ſeen the preceding evening, bore ſouth-weſt by ſouth, at the diſtance of nine or ten leagues. A great hollow ſwell from the weſt-ſouth-weſtward, convinced us, that there was no main land, in that direction, near us. We ſteered a northerly courſe till ſix o'clock in the afternoon, when the wind, veering to the ſouth-eaſt, enabled us to ſteer eaſt-north-eaſt. The coaſt lay in this direction, and, at twelve o'clock on the following day, was at the diſtance of about four leagues.

We made but little progreſs on the 6th and 7th, as the wind was northerly. In the evening of the latter day, about eight o'clock, the depth of water was nineteen fathoms, and we were three or four leagues from the coaſt, which, on Wedneſday the 8th, extended from ſouth-ſouth-weſt to eaſt by north, and was all low land, with a ridge of mountains, covered with ſnow, behind it. It is not improbable, that this low coaſt extends to a conſiderable diſtance towards the ſouth-weſt; and that thoſe places which we ſometimes ſuppoſed to be inlets or bays, are nothing more than vallies between the mountains. This day we put our hooks and lines over, and caught plenty of fine cod.

On

On the 9th, in the morning, having a breeze at north-weſt, we ſteered eaſt by north, in order to make a nearer approach to the coaſt. At noon, we were at the diſtance of about two leagues from the land, which was obſerved to extend from ſouth by eaſt to eaſt-north-eaſt; being all a low coaſt, with points projecting in ſeveral places, which, from the deck, had the appearance of iſlands; but, from the maſt-head, we ſaw that low land connected them. We were now in the longitude of 201° 33′ eaſt, and in the latitude of 57° 49′ north. In this ſituation, our ſoundings were fifteen fathoms, over a bottom of fine black ſand.

In advancing towards the north-eaſt, we had found that the depth of water gradually decreaſed, and the coaſt trended more and more northerly. But we obſerved, that the ridge of mountains behind it, continued to lie in the ſame direction as thoſe that were more weſterly; ſo that the extent of the low land, between the coaſt and the foot of the mountains, inſenſibly increaſed. Both the low and high grounds were totally deſtitute of wood; but were apparently covered with a green turf, the mountains excepted, which were involved in ſnow.

As we proceeded along the coaſt with a light weſterly breeze, the water ſhoaled gradually from fifteen to ten fathoms, though we were eight or ten miles diſtant from the ſhore. About eight

o'clock in the evening, a lofty mountain, which had been ſome time within ſight, bore ſouth-eaſt by eaſt, at the diſtance of twenty-one leagues. Several other mountains, forming a part of the ſame chain, and much further diſtant, bore eaſt 3° north. The coaſt was ſeen to extend as far as north-eaſt half north, where it ſeemed to terminate in a point, beyond which it was both our hope and expectation, that it would aſſume a more eaſterly direction. But, not long afterwards, we perceived low land, that extended from behind this point, as far as north-weſt by weſt, where it was loſt in the horizon; and behind it we diſcerned high land, appearing in hills detached from each other. Thus the fine proſpect we had of getting to the northward vaniſhed in an inſtant. We ſtood on till nine o'clock, and then the point before-mentioned was about one league diſtant, bearing north-eaſt half eaſt. Behind the point is a river, which, at its entrance, ſeemed to be a mile in breadth. The water appeared ſomewhat diſcoloured, as upon ſhoals; but a calm would have given it a ſimilar aſpect. It ſeemed to take a winding direction, through the extenſive flat which lies between the chain of mountains towards the ſouth-eaſt, and the hills to the north-weſtward. It doubtleſs abounds with ſalmon, as many of thoſe fiſh were ſeen leaping in the ſea before the entrance, and ſome were found in the maws of cod that we had caught,

caught. The mouth of this river, which we diſtinguiſhed by the appellation of Briſtol River, is ſituated in the longitude of 201° 55′ eaſt, and in the latitude of 58° 27′ north.

At day-break, on the 10th, we made ſail to the weſt-ſouth-weſt, with a light breeze at north-eaſt. About eleven o'clock, thinking that the coaſt towards the north-weſt terminated in a point, bearing north-weſt by weſt, the Commodore ſteered for that point, having ordered the Diſcovery to keep a-head. But, before that veſſel had run a mile, ſhe made a ſignal for ſhoal water. At that very time we had the depth of ſeven fathoms; and before we could get the head of our ſhip the other way, we had leſs than five: but the Diſcovery's ſoundings were leſs than four fathoms. We now ſtood back to the north-eaſt, three or four miles; but obſerving that there was a ſtrong tide ſetting to the weſt-ſouth-weſt, that is, towards the ſhoal, we brought the ſhips to anchor in about ten fathoms, over a ſandy bottom. Two hours after we had caſt anchor, the water had fallen upwards of two feet; which proved, that it was the tide of ebb that came from Briſtol River.

In the afternoon, at four o'clock, the wind having ſhifted to the ſouth-weſt, we weighed and made ſail towards the ſouth, ſeveral boats being occupied a-head in ſounding. Having paſſed over the ſouth-end of the ſhoal, in ſix fathoms

water, we afterwards got into thirteen and fifteen; in which laſt depth we let go our anchors again, between eight and nine in the evening; ſome part of the chain of mountains, on the ſouth-eaſtern ſhore, being in ſight, and bearing ſouth-eaſt half ſouth; and the moſt weſterly land on the other ſhore bearing north-weſt. In the courſe of this day, we had deſcried high land, which bore north 60° weſt, and which we ſuppoſed to be about twelve leagues diſtant.

We weighed anchor the next morning, at two o'clock, with a gentle breeze at ſouth-weſt by weſt, and plied to windward till nine; when judging the flood-tide to be now againſt us, we anchored in twenty-four fathoms water. At one in the afternoon, the fog, which had this morning prevailed, diſperſing, and the tide becoming favourable, we weighed again, and plied to the ſouth-weſtward. Towards the evening, the wind was extremely variable, and we had ſome thunder: we had heard none before, from the time of our arrival on the coaſt; and that which we now heard was at a great diſtance. The wind ſettling again in the ſouth-weſt quarter, in the morning of Sunday the 12th, we ſteered a north-weſt courſe, and, at ten o'clock, ſaw the continent. At mid-day, it extended from north-eaſt by north to north-north-weſt a quarter weſt; and an elevated hill appeared in the direction of north-north-weſt, nine or ten leagues diſtant. This

was

was found to be an iſland, to which, on account of its figure, Captain Cook gave the name of Round Iſland. It ſtands in the latitude of 58° 37′ north, and the longitude of 200° 6′ eaſt, and is ſeven miles diſtant from the continent. At nine in the evening, having ſteered a northerly courſe to within three leagues of the ſhore, we tacked in fourteen fathoms water, the extremities of the coaſt bearing eaſt-ſouth-eaſt half eaſt, and weſt.

The wind now veered to the north-weſt, and enabled us to ſtretch along the ſhore, till two the next morning, when we ſuddenly got into ſix fathoms water, being then ſix miles from the land. After we had edged off a little, our depth of water gradually increaſed; and, at twelve o'clock, our ſoundings were twenty fathoms. Round Iſland, at this time, bore north 5° eaſt; and the weſtern extreme of the coaſt was ſeven leagues diſtant, bearing north 16° weſt. It is an elevated point, to which the appellation of Calm Point was given, from our having calm weather while we were off it. To the north-weſtward of Round Iſland, we diſcerned two or three hillocks, which had an inſular appearance; and perhaps they may be iſlands, for we had but a diſtant proſpect of this particular part of the coaſt.

We advanced but ſlowly on the 14th and 15th, having little wind, and, at times, a very thick fog. Our ſoundings were from twenty-ſix

fourteen fathoms; and we had pretty good ſucceſs in fiſhing, for we caught plenty of cod, and ſome flat fiſh. On Thurſday the 16th, at five o'clock in the morning, the fog clearing up, we found ourſelves nearer the ſhore than we expected. Calm Point bore north 72° eaſt, and a point about eight leagues from it, in a weſterly direction, bore north 3° eaſt, only three miles diſtant. Betwixt theſe two points, the coaſt forms a bay, in ſeveral parts of which the land could ſcarcely be ſeen from the maſt-head. There is another bay on the north-weſtern ſide of the laſt-mentioned point, between it and a high promontory, which now bore north 36° weſt, at the diſtance of ſixteen miles. About nine o'clock, Captain Cook diſpatched Lieutenant Williamſon to this promontory, with orders to go aſhore, and obſerve what direction the coaſt aſſumed beyond it, and what was the produce of the country; which, when viewed from the ſhips, had but a ſteril aſpect. We here found the flood-tide ſetting ſtrongly towards the north-weſt, along the coaſt. At twelve o'clock, it was high water, and we caſt anchor at the diſtance of twelve miles from the ſhore, in twenty-four fathoms water. In the afternoon, about five, the tide beginning to make in our favour, we weighed, and drove with it, there being no wind.

Mr. Williamſon, at his return, reported, that he had landed on the point, and, having aſcended the

the moſt elevated hill, found, that the moſt diſtant part of the coaſt in ſight was nearly in a northerly direction. He took poſſeſſion of the country in the name of his Britannic Majeſty, and left on the hill a bottle, containing a paper, on which the names of our ſhips, and of their commanders, and the date of the diſcovery, were inſcribed. The promontory, which he named Cape Newenham, is a rocky point, of conſiderable height; and ſtands in the longitude of 197° 36′ eaſt, and in the latitude of 58° 42′ north. Over it, or within it, two lofty hills riſe one behind the other; of which the innermoſt, or eaſternmoſt, is the higheſt. The country, as far as Mr. Williamſon could diſcern, produces not a ſingle tree or ſhrub. The hills were naked; but, on the lower grounds, there grew graſs and plants of various kinds, very few of which were at this time in flower. He met with no other animals than a doe and her fawn, and a dead ſea-horſe or cow that lay upon the beach. Of the latter animals we had lately ſeen a conſiderable number.

The coaſt, as we have already mentioned, aſſuming a northerly direction from Cape Newenham, that cape is the northern boundary of the extenſive bay and gulph, ſituate before the river Briſtol, which, in honour of the Admiral Earl of Briſtol, received from the Commodore the denomination of Briſtol Bay. Cape Qoneemak forms the ſouthern limit of this bay; and is

eighty-

eighty-two leagues diſtant, in the direction of ſouth-ſouth-weſt, from Cape Newenham.

A light breeze ariſing about eight o'clock in the evening, and ſettling at ſouth-ſouth-eaſt, we ſteered to the north-weſt, and north-north-weſt, round Cape Newenham; which, at twelve the following day, was four leagues diſtant, bearing ſouth by eaſt. Our ſoundings, at this time, were ſeventeen fathoms; the moſt advanced land towards the north bore north 30° eaſt; and the neareſt part of the coaſt was three leagues and a half diſtant. During the whole afternoon, there was but little wind; ſo that, by ten o'clock in the evening, we had only proceeded three leagues on a northerly courſe.

We ſteered north by weſt till eight o'clock the next morning, (Saturday the 18th) when, the depth of water ſuddenly decreaſing to ſeven and five fathoms, we brought to, till a boat from each of our ſhips was ſent a-head to ſound, and then ſteered to the north-eaſt. At noon, the water was deepened to ſeventeen fathoms. Cape Newenham was now eleven or twelve leagues diſtant, bearing ſouth 9° eaſt; the north-eaſtern extremity of the land in ſight bore north 66° eaſt; and the diſtance of the neareſt ſhore was four or five leagues. Our preſent latitude was 59° 16′ north. Between Cape Newenham and this latitude, the coaſt conſiſts of low land and hills, and ſeemed to form ſeveral bays.

Before

Before one o'clock, the boats a-head diſplayed the ſignal of ſhoal water. They had, indeed, only two fathoms; and, at the ſame time, the ſhips were in ſix fathoms water. By hauling more to the north, we continued nearly in the ſame depth till between five and ſix o'clock, when our boats finding leſs and leſs water, Captain Cook made the ſignal to the Diſcovery, which was then a-head, to caſt anchor, and both ſhips ſoon came to. In bringing up the Reſolution, her cable parted at the clinch, ſo that we were obliged to make uſe of the other anchor. We rode in ſix fathoms water, over a bottom of ſand, at the diſtance of four or five leagues from the continent. Cape Newenham now bore ſouth, ſixteen or ſeventeen leagues diſtant; the fartheſt hills we could perceive towards the north, bore north-eaſt by eaſt; and there was low land ſtretching out from the more elevated land, as far as north by eaſt. Without this there was a ſhoal of ſtones and ſand, dry at half ebb. The two maſters having been ſent, each in a boat, to ſound between this ſhoal and the coaſt, reported, on their return, that there was a channel, in which the ſoundings were ſix and ſeven fathoms, but that it was rather narrow and intricate.

We attempted, at low water, to get a hawſer round the loſt anchor, but we did not then meet with ſucceſs. However, being reſolved not to leave it behind us, while there was any proſpect

of

of recovering it, we perſevered in our endeavours; and, at length, in the evening of the 20th, we ſucceeded. While we were thus occupied, the Commodore ordered Captain Clerke to diſpatch his maſter in a boat to ſearch for a paſſage in a ſouth-weſt direction. He accordingly did ſo, but no channel was obſerved in that quarter; nor did it appear that there was any other way to get clear of the ſhoals, than by returning by the ſame track in which we had entered. For though, by following the channel we were now in, we might perhaps have got further down the coaſt; and though this channel might probably have carried us at laſt to the northward, clear of the ſhoals, yet the attempt would have been attended with extreme hazard; and, in caſe of ill ſucceſs, there would have been a great loſs of time that we could not conveniently ſpare. Theſe reaſons induced the Commodore to return by the way which had brought us in, and thus avoid the ſhoals.

The longitude of our preſent ſtation, by lunar obſervations, was 197° 45′ 48″ eaſt, and the latitude 59° 37′ 30″ north. The moſt northern part of the coaſt, that we could diſcern from this ſtation, was ſuppoſed to be ſituate in the latitude of 60°. It formed, to appearance, a low point, which received the name of Shoal Neſs. The tide of flood ſets to the northward, and the ebb to the ſouthward: it riſes and falls five or ſix

feet

feet upon a perpendicular; and we reckon that it is high water at eight o'clock, on the full and change days.

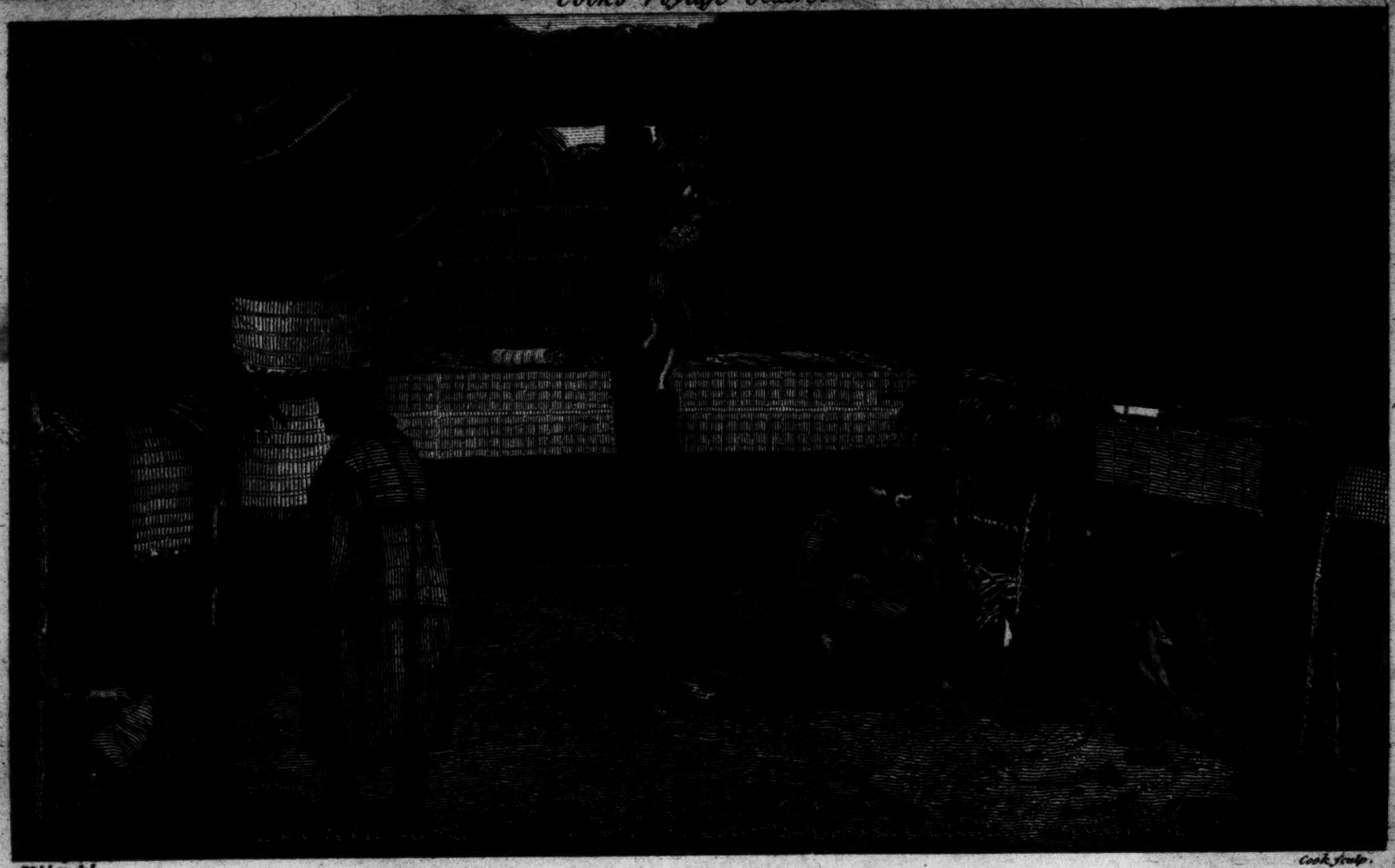
At three in the morning of the 21ſt, we weighed anchor with a gentle breeze at north-north-weſt, and ſteered back to the ſouth, having three boats a-head employed in ſounding. Notwithſtanding this precaution, we met with greater difficulty in returning than we had found in advancing; and were at length under the neceſſity of anchoring, to avoid the danger of running upon a ſhoal that had only a depth of five feet. While we lay at anchor, twenty-ſeven Americans, each in a ſeparate canoe, came off to the ſhips, which they approached with ſome degree of caution. As they advanced, they hollowed and opened their arms; thereby intimating, as we underſtood, their peaceable intentions. Some of them, at laſt, came near enough to receive a few trifling articles which we threw to them. This gave encouragement to the others to venture along-ſide; and a traffic quickly commenced between them and our people, who obtained wooden veſſels, bows, darts, arrows, dreſſes of ſkins, &c. in exchange for which the natives accepted whatever we offered them. They appeared to be the ſame ſort of people, with thoſe we had met with all along this coaſt; and they wore in their lips and noſes the ſame ſpecies of ornaments, but were not ſo well clothed, and were far more dirty.

They

They ſeemed to be perfectly unacquainted with any civilized nation; they were ignorant of the uſe of tobacco; nor did we obſerve in their poſſeſſion any foreign article, unleſs a knife may be conſidered as ſuch. This, indeed, was nothing more than a piece of common iron fitted in a handle, made of wood, ſo as to ſerve the purpoſe of a knife. They, however, ſo well knew the uſe and value of this inſtrument, that it ſeemed to be almoſt the only article they were deſirous of.

The hair of moſt of them was ſhaved, or cut ſhort off, a few locks only being left on one ſide, or behind. They wore, as a covering for their heads, a hood of ſkins, and a bonnet, which was ſeemingly of wood. One part of their dreſs, which we procured from them, was a kind of girdle, made of ſkin in a very neat manner, with trappings depending from it and paſſing betwixt the thighs, ſo as to conceal the adjacent parts. From the uſe of this girdle, it is probable that they ſometimes go in other reſpects naked, even in this high northern latitude; for it can ſcarcely be ſuppoſed that they wear it under their other clothing. Their canoes were covered with ſkins, like thoſe we had lately ſeen; but they were broader, and the hole wherein the perſon ſits was wider than in any of thoſe we had before met with. Our boats returning from ſounding appeared to give them ſome alarm, ſo that they all departed

Parker del. The INSIDE of an HOUSE, in OONALASHKA. Cook Sculp.



Webber del. Cook Sculp.

The INSIDE of a HOUSE, in OONALASHKA.

BRITISH
6 AU 75
MUSEUM

departed ſooner than perhaps they otherwiſe would have done.

We did not get clear of the ſhoals before the evening of Wedneſday the 22d; and then we durſt not venture to ſteer towards the weſt during the night, but ſpent it off Cape Newenham. At day-break, on the 23d, we ſtood to the north-weſtward, the Diſcovery being ordered to go a-head. Before we had proceeded two leagues, our ſoundings decreaſed to ſix fathoms. Being apprehenſive, that, if we continued this courſe, we ſhould meet with leſs and leſs water, we hauled to the ſouth, with a freſh eaſterly breeze. This courſe gradually brought us into eighteen fathoms water, upon which we ventured to ſteer a little weſterly, and afterwards due weſt, when we at length found twenty-ſix fathoms. At noon, on the 24th, our longitude, by obſervation, was 194° 22′ eaſt, and our latitude 58° 7′ north. About three leagues to the weſt of this ſituation, our ſoundings were twenty-eight fathoms; and we then ſteered weſt-north-weſt, the depth of water gradually increaſing to thirty-four fathoms. We ſhould have ſteered more northerly had not the wind prevented us.

In the evening of Saturday the 25th, having but little wind, and an exceedingly thick fog, we let go our anchors in thirty fathoms; our longitude being, at that time, 191° 37′ eaſt, and our latitude 58° 29′ north. About ſix o'clock the

next morning, the weather in ſome degree clearing up, we weighed, and, with a gentle breeze at eaſt, ſteered to the northward, our depth of water being from twenty-five to twenty-eight fathoms. After we had proceeded on this courſe for the ſpace of nine leagues, the wind veered to the north, ſo that we were obliged to ſteer more weſterly. The weather, for the moſt part, continued to be foggy, till about twelve o'clock on the 28th, when we had clear ſun-ſhine for a few hours, during which ſeveral lunar obſervations were made. The mean reſult of theſe, reduced to noon, at which time our latitude was 59° 55′ north, gave 190° 6′ eaſt longitude, and the time-keeper gave 189° 59′.

Continuing our weſterly courſe, we diſcovered land at four in the morning of the 29th, bearing north-weſt by weſt, at the diſtance of ſix leagues. We ſtood towards it till between ten and eleven, when we tacked in twenty-four fathoms, being then a league from the land, which bore north-north-weſt. It was the ſouth-eaſtern extreme, and formed a perpendicular cliff of great height; upon which account, Captain Cook gave it the name of Point Upright. It ſtands in the longitude of 187° 30′ eaſt, and in the latitude of 60° 17′ north. More land was perceived to the weſtward of this point; and, at a clear interval, we diſcerned another portion of high land, bearing weſt by ſouth; and this ſeemed to be perfectly

ſeparated

ſeparated from the other. We here obſerved an amazing number of birds, ſuch as guillemots, awks, &c.

During the whole afternoon we had baffling light winds, which occaſioned our progreſs to be but ſlow; and the weather was not ſufficiently clear, to enable us to determine the extent of the land that was before us. We conjectured that it was one of the many iſlands laid down in Mr. Stæhlin's map of the New Northern Archipelago; and we every moment expected to deſcry more of them.

On the 30th, at four o'clock in the afternoon, Point Upright was ſix leagues diſtant, bearing north-weſt by north. A light breeze now ſpringing up at north-north-weſt, we ſteered to the north-eaſtward till four the next morning, when the wind veered to the eaſt; we then tacked, and ſtood to the north-weſt. The wind, not long after, ſhifting to ſouth-eaſt, we ſteered north-eaſt by north; and continued this courſe, with ſoundings from thirty-five to twenty fathoms, till noon the following day (Auguſt 1.) Our latitude, at this time, was 60° 58′ north, and our longitude was 191° eaſt. The wind now becoming north-eaſterly, we firſt made a ſtretch of about ten leagues towards the north-weſt; and then, as we obſerved no land in that direction, we ſtood back to the eaſt for the ſpace of fourteen or fifteen leagues, and met with a conſiderable quantity of

drift-wood. Our depth of water was from twenty-two to nineteen fathoms.

On Sunday, the 2d of Auguſt, variable light winds, with ſhowers of rain, prevailed the whole day. In the morning of the 3d, the wind ſettling in the ſouth-eaſt quarter, we reſumed our northward courſe. At twelve o'clock our ſoundings were ſixteen fathoms, our latitude was 62° 34′ north, and longitude 192° eaſt.

Between three and four o'clock this afternoon Mr. Anderſon, Surgeon of the Reſolution, expired, after he had lingered under a conſumption for upwards of a twelvemonth. He was a ſenſible, intelligent young man, and an agreeable companion. He had great ſkill in his profeſſion, and had acquired a conſiderable portion of knowledge in other departments of ſcience. Our readers will doubtleſs have obſerved, how uſeful an aſſiſtant he had proved in the courſe of the voyage; and if his life had been prolonged to a later period, the public might have received from him many valuable communications reſpecting the natural hiſtory of the different places viſited by us. Soon after he had reſigned his breath, we diſcovered land to the weſtward, at the diſtance of twelve leagues. We ſuppoſed it to be an iſland; and the Commodore, to perpetuate the memory of the deceaſed, for whom he had a particular eſteem, diſtinguiſhed it by the name of Anderſon's Iſland. The following day Mr.

Law,

Law, Surgeon of the Diſcovery, was removed into the Reſolution; and Mr. Samuel, the Surgeon's firſt mate of the Reſolution, was appointed to ſucceed Mr. Law as Surgeon of the Diſcovery.

At three in the afternoon, on the 4th, we ſaw land extending from north-north-eaſt to north-weſt. We ſteered towards it till four, when, being four or five miles diſtant from it, we tacked; and, not long afterwards, the wind failing, we let go our anchors in thirteen fathoms, over a ſandy bottom, at the diſtance of about two leagues from land. Our latitude was now 64° 27′ north, and longitude 194° 18′ eaſt. We could, at intervals, diſcern the coaſt extending from eaſt to north-weſt, and an iſland of conſiderable elevation, bearing weſt by north, nine miles diſtant.

The land before us, which we imagined to be the continent of America, appeared rather low next the ſea; but, inland, it roſe in hills, which ſeemed to be of a tolerable height. It had a greeniſh hue, and was apparently deſtitute of wood, and free from ſnow. While our ſhips remained at anchor, we obſerved that the tide of flood came from the eaſtward, and ſet to the weſtward, till between the hours of ten and eleven; from which time, till two o'clock the next morning, the ſtream ſet to the eaſt, and the water fell three feet. The flood running both

longer and ſtronger than the ebb, we concluded, that there was a weſterly current beſides the tide.

On Wedneſday the 5th, at ten o'clock in the morning, we ran down, and, ſoon after, anchored between the iſland and the continent in ſeven fathoms. Not long after we had caſt anchor, Captain Cook, accompanied by Mr. King, and ſome other officers, landed upon the iſland. He hoped to have had from it a proſpect of the coaſt and ſea towards the weſt; but, in that direction, the fog was ſo thick, that the view was not more extenſive than it was from our ſhips. The coaſt of the continent ſeemed to incline to the north, at a low point, named by us Point Rodney, which bore from the iſland north-weſt half weſt, at the diſtance of three or four leagues; but the high land, which aſſumed a more northerly direction, was perceived at a much greater diſtance.

The latitude of this iſland is 64° 30′ north, and its longitude is 193° 57′ eaſt. It is about twelve miles in circumference. The ſurface of the ground principally conſiſts of large looſe ſtones, covered in many places with moſs and other vegetables, of which twenty or thirty different ſpecies were obſerved, and moſt of them were in flower. But the Captain ſaw not a tree or ſhrub, either on the iſland, or upon the neighbouring continent. Near the beach where he landed, was a conſiderable quantity of wild purſlain, long-wort, peaſe, &c. ſome of which he took

took on board for boiling. He ſaw ſeveral plovers, and other ſmall birds; a fox was alſo ſeen. He met with ſome decayed huts, built partly under ground. People had lately been upon the iſland; and it is more than probable, that they often repair to it, there being a beaten path from one end to the other. At a ſmall diſtance from that part of the ſhore where our gentlemen landed, they found a ſledge, which induced Captain Cook to give the iſland the appellation of Sledge Iſland. It appeared to be ſuch a one as is uſed by the Ruſſians in Kamtſchatka, for the purpoſe of conveying goods from one place to another over the ſnow or ice. It was about twenty inches in breadth, and ten feet in length; had a ſort of rail-work on each ſide, and was ſhod with bone. Its conſtruction was admirable, and its various parts were put together with great neatneſs; ſome with wooden pins, but for the moſt part with thongs or laſhings of whale-bone; in conſequence of which, the Captain imagined that it was entirely the workmanſhip of the natives.

We weighed anchor at three o'clock in the morning of the 6th, and made ſail to the north-weſt, with a light breeze from the ſouthward. Having afterwards but little wind, and that variable, we made but a ſlow progreſs; and, at eight o'clock in the evening, finding the ſhips getting into ſhoal-water, we anchored in ſeven fathoms, our diſtance from the coaſt being about two

leagues. Sledge Iſland then bore ſouth 51° eaſt, nine or ten leagues diſtant. Soon after we had let go our anchors, the weather, which had been miſty, cleared up, and we perceived high land extending from north 40° eaſt to north 30° weſt, ſeemingly diſjoined from the coaſt near which we lay at anchor, which appeared to extend to the north-eaſtward. We at the ſame time ſaw an iſland bearing north 81° weſt, at the diſtance of eight or nine leagues. It ſeemed to be of ſmall extent, and was named King's Iſland. We rode at anchor till eight the next morning, when we weighed, and ſteered a north-weſt courſe. The weather being clear towards the evening, we obtained a ſight of the north-weſtern land, diſtant about three leagues. We paſſed the night in making ſhort boards, the weather being rainy and miſty, and the wind inconſiderable. Between four and five in the morning of the 8th, we again had a ſight of the north-weſt land; and, not long afterwards, having a calm, and being driven by a current towards the ſhore, we thought proper to anchor in twelve fathoms water, at the diſtance of about two miles from the coaſt. Over the weſtern extremity is a lofty peaked hill, ſituate in the longitude of 192° 18′ eaſt, and in the latitude of 65° 36′ north. A north-eaſterly breeze ſpringing up at eight o'clock, we weighed, and made ſail to the ſouth-eaſtward, hoping to find a paſſage between this north-weſt land and the coaſt,

coaſt, near which we had caſt anchor in the evening of the 6th. But we quickly got into ſeven fathoms water, and perceived low land connecting the two coaſts, and the elevated land behind it.

Convinced that the whole was a continued coaſt, we now tacked, and ſteered for its north-weſtern part, near which we anchored in ſeventeen fathoms. The weather, at preſent, was very thick and rainy; but, at four the next morning, it cleared up, and enabled us to diſcern the neighbouring land. A lofty ſteep rock or iſland bore weſt by ſouth; another iſland to the northward of it, and conſiderably larger, bore weſt by north; the peaked hill before-mentioned, ſouth-eaſt by eaſt; and the point that was under it, ſouth 32° eaſt. Under this hill is ſome low land, extending towards the north-weſt, the extreme point of which was now about one league diſtant, bearing north-eaſt by eaſt. Over it, and alſo beyond it, we obſerved ſome high land, which we imagined was a continuation of the continent.

This point of land, which the Commodore diſtinguiſhed by the name of Cape Prince of Wales, is the weſtern extreme of all America hitherto known. It ſtands in the longitude of 191° 45′ eaſt, and in the latitude of 65° 46′ north. We fancied that we ſaw ſome people on the coaſt; and, perhaps, we were not miſtaken in our ſuppoſition, as ſome elevations like ſtages,

and

and others reſembling huts, were obſerved at the ſame place.

At eight o'clock this morning, a faint northerly breeze ariſing, we weighed anchor: but our ſails were ſcarcely ſet, when it began to blow and rain with great violence, there being, at the ſame time, miſty weather. The wind and current were in contrary directions, raiſing ſuch a ſea, that it often broke into the ſhip. Having plied to windward, with little effect, till two o'clock in the afternoon, we ſtood for the iſland which we had perceived to the weſtward, intending to caſt anchor under it till the gale ſhould abate. But, upon our nearer approach to this land, we found that it was compoſed of two ſmall iſlands, neither of which exceeded three or four leagues in circumference. As theſe could afford us little ſhelter, we did not come to an anchor, but continued to ſtretch towards the weſt; and, about eight o'clock in the evening, we ſaw land extending from north-north-weſt to weſt by ſouth, the diſtance of the neareſt part being ſix leagues. We ſtood on till ten o'clock, and then made a board towards the eaſt, in order to paſs the night.

On Monday the 10th, at break of day, we reſumed our weſtward courſe for the land ſeen by us the preceding evening. At eleven minutes after ſeven o'clock, it extended from ſouth 72° weſt to north 41° eaſt. Betwixt the ſouth-weſtern extremity, and a point bearing weſt, ſix miles

miles diſtant, the coaſt forms a ſpacious bay, in which we dropped our anchors at ten in the forenoon, about two miles from the northern ſhore, over a gravelly bottom, at the depth of ten fathoms. The northern point of this bay bore north 43° eaſt; its ſouthern point ſouth 58° weſt; the bottom of the bay, north 60° weſt, between two and three leagues diſtant; and the two iſlands that we had paſſed the preceding day, were at the diſtance of fourteen leagues, bearing north 72° eaſt.

CHAP.

## CHAP. IX.

*Captain Cook lands at a Village—Interview with ſome of the Natives, the Tſchutſki—Their Weapons deſcribed—Their Perſons—Ornaments—Dreſs—Winter Habitations—Summer Huts—Canoes—The Ships quit the Bay—Croſs the Strait to the American Coaſt—Point Mulgrave—Appearance of a prodigious Maſs of Ice—Icy Cape—The Sea, in a Manner, blocked up with Ice—Sea Horſes killed, and made Uſe of as Proviſions—Account of theſe Animals—The Ships almoſt ſurrounded with Ice—Cape Liſburne—Unſucceſsful Attempts to get to the North through the Ice—Remarks on the Formation, &c. of this Ice—Arrival on the Aſiatic Coaſt—Cape North.*

WHILE we were ſteering for this bay, we obſerved, on the north ſhore, a village, and ſome people, who ſeemed to have been thrown into confuſion, or fear, at the ſight of our veſſels. We could plainly perceive perſons running up the country with burdens upon their ſhoulders. At this village Captain Cook propoſed to land; and accordingly, went with three armed boats, accompanied by ſome of the officers. Thirty or forty men, each of whom was armed with a ſpontoon, a bow, and arrows, ſtood drawn up on an eminence near the houſes; three of them came down

down towards the ſhore, on the approach of our gentlemen, and were ſo polite as to pull off their caps, and make them low bows. Though this civility was returned, it did not inſpire them with ſufficient confidence to wait for the landing of our party; for, the inſtant they put the boats aſhore, the natives retired. Captain Cook followed them alone, without any thing in his hand; and, by ſigns and geſtures, prevailed on them to ſtop, and accept ſome trifling preſents: in return for theſe, they gave him two fox-ſkins, and a couple of ſea-horſe teeth. The Captain was of opinion, that they had brought theſe articles down with them for the purpoſe of preſenting them to him; and that they would have given them to him, even if they had expected no return.

They ſeemed very timid and cautious; intimating their deſire, by ſigns, that no more of our people ſhould be ſuffered to come up. On the Captain's laying his hand on the ſhoulder of one of them, he ſtarted back ſeveral paces; in proportion as he advanced, they retreated, always in the attitude of being ready to make uſe of their ſpears; while thoſe on the eminence, were prepared to ſupport them with their arrows. Inſenſibly, the Captain, and two or three of his companions, introduced themſelves among them. The diſtribution of a few beads among ſome of them, ſoon created a degree of confidence, ſo that they were not alarmed, when the Captain

was joined by a few more of his people; and, in a ſhort time, a kind of traffic was entered into. In exchange for tobacco, knives, beads, and other articles, they gave a few arrows, and ſome of their clothing; but nothing that our people had to offer, could induce them to part with a ſpear or a bow. Theſe they held in continual readineſs, never quitting them, except at one time, when four or five perſons laid theirs down, while they favoured our party with a ſong and a dance; and even then, they placed them in ſuch a manner, that they could lay hold of them in a moment.

Their arrows were pointed either with ſtone or bone, but very few of them had barbs; and ſome of them had a round blunt point. What uſe theſe are applied to, we cannot ſay, unleſs it be to kill ſmall animals without damaging the ſkin. Their bows were ſuch as we had obſerved on the American coaſt: their ſpontoons, or ſpears, were of iron or ſteel, and of European or Aſiatic workmanſhip; and conſiderable pains had been taken to embelliſh them with carving, and inlayings of braſs, and of a white metal. Thoſe who ſtood with bows and arrows in their hands, had the ſpear ſlung by a leathern ſtrap over their right ſhoulder. A leathern quiver, ſlung over their left ſhoulder, ſerved to contain arrows; and ſome of theſe quivers were exceedingly beautiful, being made of red leather, on which was very neat embroidery,

broidery, and other ornaments. Several other things, and particularly their clothing, indicated a degree of ingenuity, far ſurpaſſing what any one would expect to find among ſo northern a people.

All the Americans we had ſeen ſince our arrival on that coaſt, had round chubby faces, and high cheek-bones, and were rather low of ſtature. The people among whom we now were, far from reſembling them, had long viſages, and were ſtout and well made: upon the whole, they appeared to be a very different nation. No women, nor children of either ſex, were obſerved, nor any aged perſons, except one man, whoſe head was bald; and he was the only one who bore no arms: the others ſeemed to be ſelect men, and rather under than above the middle age. The elderly man had a black mark acroſs his face, which was not perceived in any others; all of them had their ears perforated, and ſome had glaſs beads hanging to them. Theſe were the only fixed ornaments ſeen about them, for they wear none to their lips: this is another particular, in which they differ from the Americans we had lately ſeen.

Their apparel conſiſted of a pair of breeches, a cap, a frock, a pair of boots, and a pair of gloves, all made of the ſkins of deer, dogs, ſeals, and other animals, and extremely well dreſſed; ſome with the hair or fur on, and others without it. The caps were made in ſuch a manner, as to

fit the head very cloſe; and beſides theſe caps, which were worn by moſt of them, we procured from them ſome hoods, made of dog-ſkins, that were ſufficiently large to cover both head and ſhoulders. Their hair was apparently black, but their heads were either ſhaved, or the hair cut cloſe off, and none of them wore beards. Of the few articles which they obtained from our people, knives and tobacco were what they ſet the moſt value upon.

The village was compoſed both of their winter and their ſummer habitations; the former are exactly like a vault, the floor of which is ſunk below the ſurface of the earth. One of them, which Captain Cook examined, was of an oval figure, about twenty feet in length, and twelve or more in height; the framing conſiſted of wood, and the ribs of whales, judiciouſly diſpoſed, and bound together with ſmaller materials of the ſame kind. Over this framing, a covering of ſtrong coarſe graſs was laid, and that again was covered with earth; ſo that on the outſide, the houſe had the appearance of a little hillock, ſupported by a wall of ſtone, of the height of three or four feet, which was built round the two ſides, and one end. At the other end of the habitation, the earth was raiſed ſloping, to walk up to the entrance, which was by a hole in the top of the roof, over that end. The floor was boarded, and under it was a ſort of cellar, in which the Captain ſaw nothing but water; at the end of each houſe was a vaulted

room,

room, which he ſuppoſed was a ſtore-room. Theſe ſtore-rooms communicated, by a dark paſſage, with the houſe; and with the open air, by a hole in the roof, which was even with the ground one walked upon; but they cannot be ſaid to be entirely below ground; for one end extended to the edge of the hill, along which they were made, and which was built up with ſtone. Over it ſtood a kind of ſentry-box, or tower, formed of the large bones of great fiſh.

Their ſummer huts were of a tolerable ſize, and circular, being brought to a point at the top. Slight poles and bones, covered with the ſkins of ſea-animals, compoſed the framing. Captain Cook examined the inſide of one: there was a fire-place juſt within the door, where a few wooden veſſels were depoſited, all very dirty. Their bed-places were cloſe to the ſide, and occupied about one-half of the circuit: ſome degree of privacy ſeemed to be obſerved; for there were ſeveral partitions, made with ſkins. The bed and bedding conſiſted of deer-ſkins, and moſt of them were clean and dry.

About the houſes were erected ſeveral ſtages, ten or twelve feet in height, ſuch as we had ſeen on ſome parts of the American coaſt. They were compoſed entirely of bones, and were apparently intended for drying their fiſh and ſkins, which were thus placed out of the reach of their dogs, of which they had great numbers. Theſe

dogs are of the fox kind, rather large, and of different colours, with long ſoft hair, that reſembles wool. They are, in all probability, uſed for the purpoſe of drawing their ſledges in winter; for it appears that they have ſledges, as the Captain ſaw many of them laid up in one of their winter huts. It is, likewiſe, not improbable, that dogs conſtitute a part of their food, for ſeveral lay dead, which had been killed that morning.

The canoes of theſe people are of the ſame kind with thoſe of the northern Americans, ſome, both of the large and ſmall ſort, being ſeen lying in a creek near the village.

From the large bones of fiſh, and other ſea-animals, it appeared, that the ſea furniſhed them with the greater part of their ſubſiſtence. The country ſeemed extremely barren, as our gentlemen ſaw not a tree or ſhrub. At ſome diſtance towards the weſt, they obſerved a ridge of mountains covered with ſnow, that had fallen not long before.

At firſt, ſome of us ſuppoſed this land to be a part of the iſland of Alaſchka, laid down in Mr. Stæhlin's map before-mentioned; but from the appearance of the coaſt, the ſituation of the oppoſite ſhore of America, and from the longitude, we ſoon conjectured that it was, more probably, the country of the Tſchutſki, or the eaſtern extremity of Aſia, explored by Beering in the year

1728.

1728. In admitting this, however, without farther examination, we muſt have pronounced Mr. Stæhlin's map, and his account of the new northern Archipelago, to be either remarkably erroneous, even in latitude, or elſe to be a mere fiction; a judgment which we would not preſume to paſs, upon a publication ſo reſpectably vouched, without producing the moſt deciſive proofs.

After our party had remained with theſe people between two and three hours, they returned on board; and, ſoon after, the wind becoming ſoutherly, we weighed anchor, ſtood out of the bay, and ſteered to the north-eaſt, between the coaſt and the two iſlands. At twelve o'clock the next day (Auguſt 11) the former extended from ſouth 80° weſt, to north 84° weſt; the latter bore ſouth 40° weſt; and the peaked hill, over Cape Prince of Wales, bore ſouth 36° eaſt. The latitude of the ſhip was 66° 5¼′ north, the longitude 191° 19′ eaſt; our ſoundings were twenty-eight fathoms; and our poſition nearly in the middle of the channel, between the two coaſts, each being at the diſtance of about ſeven leagues.

We ſteered to the eaſtward from this ſtation, in order to make a nearer approach to the American coaſt. In this courſe the water gradually ſhoaled; and there being very little wind, and all our endeavours to increaſe our depth failing, we were obliged at laſt to caſt anchor in ſix fathoms; which was the only remedy remaining,

to prevent the ſhips driving into more ſhallow water. The neareſt part of the weſtern land bore weſt, twelve leagues diſtant; the peaked mountain over Cape Prince of Wales, bore ſouth 16° weſt; and the moſt northern part of the American continent in ſight, eaſt-ſouth-eaſt; the diſtance of the neareſt part being about four leagues. After we had anchored, a boat was diſpatched to ſound, and the water was found to ſhoal gradually towards the land. While our ſhips lay at anchor, which was from ſix to nine in the evening, we perceived little or no current, nor did we obſerve that the water roſe or fell.

A northerly breeze ſpringing up, we weighed, and made ſail to the weſtward, which courſe ſoon brought us into deep water; and, during the 12th, we plied to the northward in ſight of both coaſts, but we kept neareſt to that of America. On the 13th, at four in the afternoon, a breeze ariſing at ſouth, we ſteered north-eaſt by north, till four o'clock the next morning, when, ſeeing no land, we directed our courſe eaſt by north; and between the hours of nine and ten, land appeared, which we ſuppoſed was a continuation of the continent. It extended from eaſt by ſouth, to eaſt by north; and, not long afterwards, we deſcried more land, bearing north by eaſt. Coming rather ſuddenly into thirteen fathoms water, at two in the afternoon, we made a trip off till four, when we again ſtood in for the land; which,

ſoon after, we ſaw, extending from north to ſouth-eaſt, the neareſt part being at the diſtance of three or four leagues. The coaſt here forms a point, named by us Point Mulgrave, which is ſituated in the latitude of 67° 45′ north, and in the longitude of 194° 51′ eaſt. The land ſeemed to be very low near the ſea, but a little farther it riſes into hills of a moderate height; the whole was free from ſnow, and apparently deſtitute of wood. We now tacked, and bore away north-weſt by weſt; but, in a ſhort time afterwards, thick weather, with rain, coming on, and the wind increaſing, we hauled more to the weſtward. At two o'clock the next morning, the wind veered to ſouth-weſt by ſouth, and blew a ſtrong gale, which abated towards noon. We now ſtood to the north-eaſt, till ſix the next morning, when we ſteered rather more eaſterly: in this run, we met with ſeveral ſea-horſes, and great numbers of birds; ſome of which reſembled ſand-larks, and others were not larger than hedge-ſparrows. We alſo ſaw ſome ſhags, ſo that we judged we were not far from land; but, having a thick fog, we could not expect to ſee any; and as the wind blew ſtrong, it was not deemed prudent to continue a courſe which was moſt likely to bring us to it. From the noon of this day, (the 16th of Auguſt) to ſix o'clock in the morning of the following, we ſteered eaſt by north; a courſe which brought us into fifteen fathoms

water. We now ſteered north-eaſt by eaſt, thinking, by ſuch a courſe, to increaſe our depth of water. But, in the ſpace of ſix leagues, it ſhoaled to eleven fathoms, which induced us to haul cloſe to the wind, that now blew at weſt. About twelve o'clock, both ſun and moon were clearly ſeen at intervals, and we made ſome haſty obſervations for the longitude; which, reduced to noon, when the latitude was 70° 33′ north, gave 197° 41′ eaſt. The time-keeper, for the ſame time, gave 198°.

Some time in the forenoon, we perceived a brightneſs in the northern horizon, like that reflected from ice, uſually called the blink. Little notice was taken of it, from a ſuppoſition that it was improbable we ſhould ſo ſoon meet with ice. The ſharpneſs of the air, however, and gloominеſs of the weather, for the two or three preceding days, ſeemed to indicate ſome ſudden change. About an hour afterwards, the ſight of an enormous maſs of ice, left us no longer in any doubt reſpecting the cauſe of the brightneſs of the horizon. Between two and three o'clock, we tacked cloſe to the edge of the ice, in twenty-two fathoms water, being then in the latitude of 70° 41′ north, and unable to ſtand on any farther: for the ice was perfectly impenetrable, and extended from weſt by ſouth, to eaſt by north, as far as the eye could reach. Here we met with great numbers of ſea-horſes, ſome of which were

in

in the water, but far more upon the ice. The Commodore had thoughts of hoiſting out the boats to kill ſome of theſe animals; but, the wind freſhening, he gave up the deſign; and we continued to ply towards the ſouth, or rather towards the weſt, for the wind came from that quarter. We made no progreſs; for, at twelve on the 18th, our latitude was 70° 44′ north, and we were almoſt five leagues farther to the eaſt.

We were, at preſent, cloſe to the edge of the ice, which was as compact as a wall, and appeared to be at leaſt ten or twelve feet in height: but, farther northward, it ſeemed to be much higher. Its ſurface was exceedingly rugged, and, in ſeveral places, we ſaw pools of water upon it. We now ſtood to the ſouth, and, after running ſix leagues, ſhoaled the water to ſeven fathoms; but it ſoon increaſed to the depth of nine fathoms. At this time, the weather, which had been hazy, becoming clearer, we ſaw land extending from ſouth to ſouth-eaſt by eaſt, at the diſtance of three or four miles. The eaſtern extremity forms a point, which was greatly encumbered with ice, on which account it was diſtinguiſhed by the name of Icy Cape. Its latitude is 70° 29′ north, and its longitude 198° 20′ eaſt. The other extreme of the land was loſt in the horizon; and we had no doubt of its being a continuation of the continent of America. The Diſcovery being about a mile aſtern, and to lee-

ward, met with leſs depth of water than we did; and tacking on that account, the Commodore was obliged to tack alſo, to prevent ſeparation.

Our preſent ſituation was very critical. We were upon a lee-ſhore in ſhoal water; and the main body of the ice to windward, was driving down upon us. It was evident, that if we continued much longer between it and the land, it would force us aſhore, unleſs it ſhould chance to take the ground before us. It appeared almoſt to join the land to leeward, and the only direction that was free from it, was to the ſouth weſtward. After making a ſhort board to the north, Captain Cook made a ſignal for the Diſcovery to tack, and his ſhip tacked at the ſame time. The wind proved in ſome meaſure favourable, ſo that we lay up ſouth-weſt, and ſouth-weſt by weſt.

On Wedneſday the 19th, at eight in the morning, the wind veering to weſt, we tacked to the northward; and, at twelve, the latitude was 70° 6′ north, and the longitude 196° 42′ eaſt. In this ſituation, we had a conſiderable quantity of drift ice about our ſhips, and the main ice was about two leagues to the north. Between one and two, we got in with the edge of it. It was leſs compact than that which we had obſerved towards the north; but it was too cloſe, and in too large pieces to attempt forcing the ſhips through it. We ſaw an amazing number of ſea-horſes on the ice, and as we were in want of freſh proviſions,

viſions, the boats from each ſhip were diſpatched to procure ſome of them. By ſeven in the evening, we had received, on board the Reſolution, nine of theſe animals; which, till this time, we had ſuppoſed to be ſea-cows; ſo that we were greatly diſappointed, particularly ſome of the ſailors, who, on account of the novelty of the thing, had been feaſting their eyes for ſome days paſt. Nor would they now have been diſappointed, nor have known the difference, if there had not been two or three men on board, who had been in Greenland, and declared what animals theſe were, and that no perſon ever eat of them. Notwithſtanding this, we made them ſerve us for proviſions, and there were few of our people who did not prefer them to our ſalt meat.

The fat of theſe animals is, at firſt, as ſweet as marrow; but, in a few days, it becomes rancid, unleſs it is ſalted, in which ſtate it will keep much longer. The lean fleſh is coarſe and blackiſh, and has a ſtrong taſte; and the heart is almoſt as well taſted as that of a bullock. The fat, when melted, affords a good quantity of oil, which burns very well in lamps; and their hides, which are of great thickneſs, were extremely uſeful about our rigging. The teeth, or tuſks, of moſt of them were, at this time, of a very ſmall ſize; even ſome of the largeſt and oldeſt of theſe animals, had them not exceeding half a foot in

length,

length. Hence we concluded, that they had lately ſhed their old teeth.

They lie upon the ice in herds of many hundreds, huddling like ſwine, one over the other; and they roar very loud; ſo that in the night, or when the weather was foggy, they gave us notice of the vicinity of the ice, before we could diſcern it. We never found the whole herd ſleeping, ſome of them being conſtantly upon the watch. Theſe, on the approach of the boat, would awake thoſe that were next to them; and the alarm being thus gradually communicated, the whole herd would preſently be awake. However, they were ſeldom in a hurry to get away, before they had been once fired at. Then they would fall into the ſea, one over the other in the utmoſt confuſion; and, if we did not happen, at the firſt diſcharge, to kill thoſe we fired at, we generally loſt them, though mortally wounded.

They did not appear to us to be ſo dangerous as ſome authors have repreſented them, not even when they were attacked. They are, indeed, more ſo, in appearance, than in reality. Vaſt multitudes of them would follow, and come cloſe up to the boats; but the flaſh of a muſket in the pan, or even the mere pointing of one at them, would ſend them down in a moment. The female will defend her young one to the very laſt, and at the expence of her own life, whether upon the ice or in the water. Nor will the young one

one quit the dam, though ſhe ſhould have been killed; ſo that, if you deſtroy one, you are ſure of the other. The dam, when in the water, holds her young one between her fore fins. Mr. Pennant, in his Synopſis of Quadrupeds, has given a very good deſcription of this animal under the name of the *Arctic Walrus*. Why it ſhould be called a ſea-horſe, is difficult to determine, unleſs the word be a corruption of the Ruſſian name *Morſe*; for they do not in the leaſt reſemble a horſe. It is, doubtleſs, the ſame animal that is found in the Gulph of St. Lawrence, and there called a ſea-cow. It is certainly more like a cow than a horſe; but this reſemblance conſiſts in nothing but the ſnout. In ſhort, it is an animal not unlike a ſeal, but incomparably larger. The length of one of them, which was none of the largeſt, was nine feet four inches from the ſnout to the tail; the circumference of its body at the ſhoulder, was ſeven feet ten inches; its circumference near the hinder fins was five feet ſix inches, and the weight of the carcaſe, without the head, ſkin, or entrails, was eight hundred and fifty-four pounds. The head weighed forty-one pounds and a half, and the ſkin two hundred and five pounds.

It may not be improper to remark, that, for ſome days before this time, we had often ſeen flocks of ducks flying to the ſouth. They were of two ſpecies, the one much larger than the other.

other. The larger ſort was of a brown colour; and of the ſmall ſort, either the duck or drake was black and white, and the other brown. Some of our people ſaid that they alſo ſaw geeſe. This ſeems to indicate, that there muſt be land to the northward, where theſe birds, in the proper ſeaſon, find ſhelter for breeding, and whence they were now on their return to a warmer climate.

Soon after we had got our ſea-horſes on board, we were, in a manner, ſurrounded with the ice; and had no means of clearing it, but by ſteering to the ſouthward, which we did till three o'clock the next morning, with a light weſterly breeze, and, in general, thick, foggy weather. Our ſoundings were from twelve to fifteen fathoms. We then tacked and ſtood to the northward till ten o'clock, when the wind ſhifting to the north, we ſtood to the weſt-ſouth-weſt and weſt. At two in the afternoon, we fell in with the main ice, and kept along the edge of it, being partly directed by the roaring of the ſea-horſes, for we had an exceeding thick fog. Thus we continued ſailing till near midnight, when we got in among the looſe pieces of ice.

The wind being eaſterly, and the fog very thick, we now hauled to the ſouthward; and, at ten the next morning, the weather clearing up, we ſaw the American continent, extending from ſouth by eaſt, to eaſt by ſouth; and, at noon, from ſouth-weſt half ſouth to eaſt, the diſtance

of

of the neareſt part being five leagues. We were at preſent in the latitude of 69° 32′ north, and in the longitude of 195° 48′ eaſt; and, as the main ice was not far from us, it is evident, that it now covered a part of the ſea; which, a few days before, had been free from it; and that it extended farther towards the ſouth, than where we firſt fell in with it.

During the afternoon we had but little wind; and the Maſter was ſent in a boat to obſerve whether there was any current, but he found none. We continued to ſteer for the American land till eight o'clock, in order to obtain a nearer view of it, and to ſearch for a harbour; but ſeeing nothing that had the appearance of one, we again ſtood to the north, with a gentle weſterly breeze. At this time, the coaſt extended from ſouth-weſt to eaſt, the neareſt part being at the diſtance of four or five leagues. The ſouthern extreme ſeemed to form a point, to which the name of Cape Liſburne was given. It is ſituate in the latitude of 69° 5′ north, and in the longitude of 194° 42′ eaſt, and appeared to be tolerably high land, even down to the ſea; but there may be low land under it, which we might not then ſee, being not leſs than ten leagues diſtant from it. In almoſt every other part, as we advanced to the north, we had found a low coaſt, from which the land riſes to a moderate height. The coaſt now before us was free from ſnow, except

cept in one or two places, and had a greeniſh hue. But we could not diſcern any wood upon it.

On Saturday the 22d, the wind was ſoutherly, and the weather for the moſt part foggy, with ſome intervals of ſunſhine. At eight in the evening, we had a calm, which continued till midnight, when we heard the ſurge of the ſea daſhing againſt the ice, and had many looſe pieces about us. A light breeze now aroſe at north-eaſt, and the fog being very thick, we ſteered to the ſouth to get clear of the ice. At eight the next morning, the fog diſperſed, and we hauled towards the weſt; for the Commodore finding that he could not get to the north near the coaſt, by reaſon of the ice, reſolved to try what could be done at a diſtance from it; and as the wind ſeemed to be fixed at north, he conſidered it as a favourable opportunity.

In our progreſs to the weſtward, the water gradually deepened to twenty-eight fathoms. With the northerly wind the air was ſharp and cold; and we had fogs, ſunſhine, ſhowers of ſnow and ſleet alternately. On the 26th, at ten in the morning, we fell in with the ice. At twelve, it extended from north-weſt to eaſt by north, and ſeemed to be thick and compact. We were now, by obſervation, in the latitude of 69° 36′ north, and in the longitude of 184° eaſt; and it now appeared that we had no better proſpect of getting to the north here, than nearer the ſhore.

We continued ſteering to the weſt, till five in the afternoon, when we were, in ſome degree, embayed by the ice, which was very cloſe in the north-weſt and north-eaſt quarters, with a great quantity of looſe ice about the edge of the main body. At this time, we had baffling light airs, but the wind ſoon ſettled at ſouth, and increaſed to a freſh gale, accompanied with ſhowers of rain. We got the tack aboard, and ſtretched to the eaſt, as this was the only direction in which the ſea was free from ice.

On Thurſday the 27th, at four in the morning, we tacked and ſtood to the weſtward, and at ſeven o'clock in the evening, we were cloſe in with the edge of the ice, which lay eaſt-north-eaſt, and weſt-ſouth-weſt, as far in each of thoſe directions as the eye could reach. There being but little wind, Captain Cook went with the boats, to examine the ſtate of the ice. He found it conſiſting of looſe pieces, of various extent, and ſo cloſe together, that he could ſcarcely enter the outer edge with a boat; and it was as impracticable for the ſhips to enter it, as if it had been ſo many rocks. He particularly remarked, that it was all pure tranſparent ice, except the upper ſurface, which was rather porous. It ſeemed to be wholly compoſed of frozen ſnow, and to have been all formed at ſea. For, not to inſiſt on the improbability of ſuch prodigious maſſes floating out of rivers, none of the productions of the land

were

were found incorporated, or mixed in it; which would certainly have been the caſe, if it had been formed in rivers, either great or ſmall.

The pieces of ice that formed the outer edge of the main body, were from forty or fifty yards in extent, to four or five; and the Captain judged, that the larger pieces reached thirty feet or more, under the ſurface of the water. He alſo thought it highly improbable, that this ice could have been the production of the preceding winter alone. He was rather inclined to ſuppoſe it to have been the production of many winters. It was equally improbable, in his opinion, that the little that now remained of the ſummer, could deſtroy even the tenth part of what now ſubſiſted of this great maſs; for the ſun had already exerted upon it the full force and influence of his rays. The ſun, indeed, according to his judgment, contributes very little towards reducing theſe enormous maſſes. For though that luminary is above the horizon a conſiderable while, it ſeldom ſhines out for more than a few hours at a time, and frequently is not ſeen for ſeveral ſucceſſive days. It is the wind, or rather the waves raiſed by the wind, that brings down the bulk of theſe prodigious maſſes, by grinding one piece againſt another, and by undermining and waſhing away thoſe parts which are expoſed to the ſurge of the ſea. This was manifeſt, from the Captain's obſerving, that the upper ſurface

of

of many pieces had been partly waſhed away, while the baſe, or under part, continued firm for ſeveral fathoms round that which appeared above water, like a ſhoal round a high rock. He meaſured the depth of water upon one, and found that it was fifteen feet, ſo that the ſhips might have ſailed over it. If he had not meaſured this depth, he would have been unwilling to believe, that there was a ſufficient weight of ice above the ſurface, to have ſunk the other ſo much below it. It may thus happen, that more ice is deſtroyed in one tempeſtuous ſeaſon, than is formed in ſeveral winters, and an endleſs accumulation of it is prevented. But that there is conſtantly a remaining ſtore, will be acknowledged by every one who has been upon the ſpot.

A thick fog, which came on while the Commodore was thus employed with the boats, haſtened him aboard ſooner than he could have wiſhed, with one ſea-horſe to each ſhip. Our party had killed many, but could not wait to bring them off. The number of theſe animals, on all the ice that we had ſeen, is really aſtoniſhing. We ſpent the night ſtanding off and on, amongſt the drift ice, and at nine o'clock the next morning, the fog having in ſome degree diſperſed, boats from each of the ſhips were diſpatched for ſea-horſes; for our people by this time began to reliſh them, and thoſe we had before furniſhed ourſelves with, were all conſumed.

At noon, our latitude was 69° 17′ north, our longitude 183° eaſt, and our depth of water was twenty-five fathoms. At two in the afternoon, having got on board as many ſea-horſes as were deemed ſufficient, and the wind freſhening at ſouth-ſouth-eaſt, we hoiſted in the boats, and ſteered to the ſouth-weſt. But being unable to weather the ice upon this tack, or to go through it, we made a board to the eaſtward, till about eight o'clock, then reſumed our courſe to the ſouth-weſt, and were obliged before midnight to tack again, on account of the ice. Not long after, the wind veering to the north-weſt, and blowing a ſtiff gale, we ſtretched to the ſouth-weſt, cloſe hauled.

On the 29th, in the morning, we ſaw the main ice towards the north, and ſoon after, perceived land bearing ſouth-weſt by weſt. In a ſhort time after this, more land was ſeen, bearing weſt. It ſhewed itſelf in two hills, reſembling iſlands, but ſoon the whole appeared connected. As we made a nearer approach to the land, the depth of water decreaſed very faſt, ſo that, at twelve o'clock, when we tacked, we found only eight fathoms; being three miles from the coaſt, which extended from ſouth 30° eaſt, to north 60° weſt. The latter extremity terminating in a bluff point, being one of the hills mentioned before.

The weather was now very hazy, with drizzling rain; but, ſoon afterwards, it cleared up, parti-

cularly to the ſouthward, weſtward, and northward. This enabled us to have a tolerable view of the coaſt; which reſembles, in every reſpect, the oppoſite coaſt of America; that is, low land next the ſea, with higher land farther back. It was totally deſtitute of wood, and even of ſnow; but was, probably, covered with a moſſy ſubſtance, that gave it a browniſh hue. In the low ground that lay between the ſea and the high land, was a lake, extending to the ſouth eaſtward farther than we could ſee. As we ſtood off, the moſt weſterly of the two hills above-mentioned, came open off the bluff point, in a north-weſt direction. It had the appearance of an iſland, but it might perhaps be connected with the other by low land, though we did not ſee it. And if that be the caſe, there is a two-fold point, with a bay between them. This point, which is rocky and ſteep, received the name of Cape North. It is ſituated nearly in the latitude of 68° 56′ north, and in the longitude of 180° 51′ eaſt. The coaſt beyond it doubtleſs aſſumes a very weſterly direction; for we could diſcern no land to the northward of it, though the horizon was there pretty clear. Wiſhing to ſee more of the coaſt to the weſtward, we tacked again, at two in the afternoon, thinking we ſhould be able to weather Cape North; but finding we could not, the wind freſhening, a thick fog ariſing, with much ſnow, and being apprehenſive of the ice coming down

upon us, the Commodore relinquiſhed the deſign he had formed of plying to the weſtward, and again ſtood off ſhore.

The ſeaſon was now ſo far advanced, and the time when the froſt generally ſets in was ſo near, that Captain Cook did not think it conſiſtent with prudence, to make any farther attempts to diſcover a paſſage into the Atlantic Ocean this year, in any direction, ſo ſmall was the probability of ſucceſs. His attention was now directed to the ſearch of ſome place, where we might recruit our wood and water; and the object that principally occupied his thoughts was, how he ſhould paſs the winter, ſo as to make ſome improvements in navigation and geography, and, at the ſame time, be in a condition to return to the northward the enſuing ſummer, to proſecute his ſearch of a paſſage into the Atlantic.

CHAP.

## CHAP. X.

*The Ships proceed along the Coaſt of Aſia—Burney's Iſland—Cape Serdze Kamen—Paſs the Eaſt Cape of Aſia—Deſcription of it—Bay of St. Lawrence—Two other Bays—Beering's Cape Tſchukotſkoi—Steer for the Coaſt of America—Cape Darby—Bald-Head—Captain Cook lands in ſearch of Wood and Water—Cape Denbigh—Some of the Natives come off to us—Beſborough Iſland—Captain Cook's Interview with a particular Family—Mr. King's Interview with the ſame Family—Supplies of Wood and Water—Mr. King ſent to examine the Coaſt—Viſits from the Natives—Their Huts—Produce of the Country—Mr. King's Report—Norton's Sound—Lunar Obſervations.*

HAVING ſtood off till our ſoundings were eighteen fathoms, we made ſail to the eaſtward, along the coaſt, which, we were now pretty well convinced, could only be the continent of Aſia. The wind blowing freſh, and there being, at the ſame time, a thick miſt, and a very heavy fall of ſnow, it was requiſite that we ſhould proceed with particular caution: we therefore brought to, for a few hours, in the night. Early the next morning, which was the 30th of Auguſt, we ſteered ſuch a courſe as we judged moſt likely to

bring us in with the land, being guided, in a great meaſure, by the land; for the weather was extremely thick and gloomy, with inceſſant ſhowers of ſnow. At ten o'clock we obtained a ſight of the coaſt, which was at the diſtance of four miles, bearing ſouth-weſt. Soon afterwards, our depth of water having decreaſed to ſeven fathoms, we hauled off. A very low point now bore ſouth-ſouth-weſt, diſtant two or three miles; to the eaſtward of which there ſeemed to be a narrow channel, that led into ſome water which we ſaw over the point. It is not improbable, that the lake above-mentioned communicates here with the ſea.

About twelve o'clock, the miſt diſperſing, we had a view of the coaſt, which extended from ſouth-eaſt to north-weſt by weſt. Some parts of it were apparently higher than others; but the greateſt part of it was rather low, with high land farther up the country. It was almoſt entirely covered with ſnow, which had fallen very lately. We ranged along the coaſt, at the diſtance of about two leagues, till ten o'clock in the evening, when we hauled off; but reſumed our courſe early on the following morning, when we had another view of the coaſt, extending from weſt to ſouth-eaſt by ſouth. At eight o'clock, the eaſtern part bore ſouth, and was found to be an iſland, which, at twelve, was four or five miles diſtant, bearing ſouth-weſt half ſouth. It is of a mode-

rate

rate height, between four and five miles in circumference, with a ſteep rocky coaſt. It is ſituate in the latitude of 67° 45′ north, about three leagues from the continent; and is diſtinguiſhed in the chart by the appellation of Burney's Iſland. The inland country, about this part, abounds with hills, ſome of which are of conſiderable elevation. The land in general was covered with ſnow, except a few ſpots on the coaſt, which ſtill continued to be low, but ſomewhat leſs ſo than farther towards the weſt.

During the two preceding days, the mean height of the mercury in the thermometer had been frequently below the freezing point, and, in general, very little above it; inſomuch that the water, in the veſſels upon deck, was often covered with a ſheet of ice. We continued to ſteer ſouth-ſouth-eaſt, almoſt in the direction of the coaſt, till five o'clock in the afternoon, when we ſaw land bearing ſouth 50° eaſt, which proved to be a continuation of the coaſt. We hauled up for it without delay; and, at ten in the evening, being a-breaſt of the eaſtern land, and doubtful of weathering it, we tacked, and made a board towards the weſt, till after one o'clock the next morning, (Tueſday, the 1ſt of September), when we again made ſail to the eaſt. The wind was now very unſettled, continually varying from north to north-eaſt. Between eight and nine, the eaſtern extremity of the land was at the diſ-

tance of ſix or ſeven miles, bearing ſouth by eaſt. A head-land appeared, at the ſame time, bearing eaſt by ſouth, half ſouth; and, not long after, we could diſcern the whole coaſt that lay between them, and a little iſland at ſome diſtance from it.

The coaſt now in ſight ſeemed to form ſeveral rocky points, that were connected by a low ſhore, without any appearance of an harbour. At a diſtance from the ſea many hills preſented themſelves to our view, the higheſt of which were involved in ſnow: in other reſpects, the whole country had a naked aſpect. At ſeven o'clock in the evening, two points of land, beyond the eaſtern head, opened off it in the direction of ſouth 37° eaſt.

Captain Cook was now convinced of what he had before imagined, that this was the country of the Tſchutſki, or the north-eaſtern coaſt of Aſia; and that Beering had proceeded thus far in the year 1728; that is, to this head, which, according to Muller, is denominated *Serdze Kamen*, on account of a rock upon it, that is of the figure of a heart. There are, indeed, many high rocks on this cape, ſome one or other of which may perhaps be ſhaped like a heart. It is a promontory of tolerable height, with a ſteep rocky cliff fronting the ſea. Its latitude is 67° 3′ north, and its longitude 188° 11′ eaſt. To the eaſt of it the coaſt is elevated and cold; but, to the weſt, it

is low, and extends north-weſt by weſt, and north-north-weſt; and it is nearly of the ſame direction all the way to Cape North. The depth of water is every where the ſame at an equal diſtance from the ſhore; and this is likewiſe the caſe on the oppoſite coaſt of America. The greateſt depth we met with, as we ranged along it, was twenty-three fathoms. During the night, or in thick foggy weather, the ſoundings are no bad guide to thoſe who ſail along either of theſe coaſts.

On the 2d of September, at eight in the morning, the moſt advanced land to the ſouth-eaſtward, bore ſouth 25° eaſt; and, from this particular point of view, had an inſular appearance. But the thick ſhowers of ſnow, that fell in quick ſucceſſion, and ſettled on the land, concealed from our ſight, at this time, a great part of the coaſt. In a ſhort time after, the ſun, which we had not ſeen for near five days, broke out during the intervals between the ſhowers, by which means the coaſt was, in ſome degree, freed from the fog; ſo that we obtained a ſight of it, and found that the whole was connected. The wind was ſtill northerly, the air was cold, and the mercury in the thermometer did not riſe above 35°, and was ſometimes not higher than 30°. At twelve o'clock our latitude was 66° 37′ north; Cape Serdze Kamen was twelve or thirteen leagues diſtant, bearing north 52° weſt; the moſt ſouth-

erly

erly point of land that we had in our ſight, bore ſouth 41° eaſt; our ſoundings were twenty-two fathoms; and the diſtance of the neareſt part of the ſhore was about two leagues.

The weather was now fair and bright; and, as we were ranging along the coaſt, we ſaw ſeveral of the natives, and ſome of their dwelling-places, which had the appearance of hillocks of earth. In the courſe of the evening we paſſed the Eaſtern Cape, or the point before-mentioned; from which the coaſt trends to the ſouth-weſtward. This is the ſame point of land that we had paſſed on the 11th of the preceding month. Thoſe who gave credit to Mr. Stæhlin's map, then ſuppoſed it to be the eaſtern point of his iſland Alaſchka; but we were, by this time, convinced, that it is no other than the eaſtern promontory of Aſia; and, perhaps, it is the proper Tſchukotſkoi Noſs, though the promontory, which received that name from Beering, is ſituated further towards the ſouth-weſt.

Muller, in his map of the diſcoveries of the Ruſſians, places the Tſchukotſkoi Noſs nearly in the latitude of 75° north, and extends it ſomewhat to the eaſtward of this cape. But Captain Cook was of opinion, that he had no good authority for ſo doing. Indeed his own, or rather Deſhneff's, account of the diſtance between the river Anadir and the Noſs, cannot well be reconciled with ſo northerly a poſition. For he ſays,

that, with the moſt favourable wind, a perſon may go by ſea from the Noſs to the river Anadir in three whole days, and that the journey by land is very little longer. But Captain Cook, having hopes of viſiting theſe parts again, deferred the diſcuſſion of this point to another opportunity. In the mean time, however, he concluded, as Beering had done before him, that this was the eaſternmoſt point of all Aſia. It is a peninſula of conſiderable elevation, joined to the continent by a very low and apparently narrow iſthmus. It has, next the ſea, a ſteep rocky cliff; and off the very point are ſeveral rocks reſembling ſpires. It ſtands in the longitude of 190° 22′ eaſt, and in the latitude of 66° 6′ north; and is thirteen leagues diſtant, in the direction of north 53° weſt, from Cape Prince of Wales, on the coaſt of America. The land about this promontory conſiſts of vallies and hills. The former terminate at the ſea in low ſhores, and the latter in ſteep rocky points. The hills appeared like naked rocks; but the vallies, though deſtitute of tree or ſhrub, were of a greeniſh hue.

After we had paſſed the Cape, we ſteered ſouth-weſt half weſt towards the northern point of St. Lawrence's Bay, in which our ſhips had anchored on the 10th of Auguſt. We reached it by eight o'clock the following morning, and ſaw ſome of the natives at the place where we had before ſeen them, as well as others on the oppoſite

ſide

ſide of the bay. Not one of them, however, came off to us; which was rather remarkable, as the weather was ſufficiently favourable, and as thoſe whom we had lately viſited had no reaſon to be diſpleaſed with us. Theſe people are certainly the Tſchutſki, whom the Ruſſians had not hitherto ſubdued; though it is manifeſt that they muſt carry on a traffic with the latter, either directly, or by the interpoſition of ſome neighbouring nation; as their being in poſſeſſion of the ſpontoons we ſaw among them, cannot otherwiſe be accounted for.

The Bay of St. Lawrence * is, at the entrance, at leaſt five leagues in breadth, and about four leagues deep, growing narrower towards the bottom, where it ſeemed to be pretty well ſheltered from the ſea winds, provided there is a competent depth of water for ſhips. The Commodore did not wait to examine it, though he was extremely deſirous of finding a convenient harbour in thoſe parts, to which he might reſort in the ſucceeding ſpring. But he wiſhed to meet with one where wood might be obtained; and he knew that none could be found here. From the ſouthern point of this bay, which is ſituated in

* Captain Cook called it by this name, from his having anchored in it on the 10th of Auguſt, which is St. Lawrence's Day. It is worthy of remark, that Beering ſailed by this very place on Auguſt 10, 1728; for which reaſon, he denominated the neighbouring iſland after the ſame ſaint.

the

the latitude of 65° 30′ north, the coaſt trends weſt by ſouth for the ſpace of about nine leagues, and there ſeems to form a deep bay or river; or elſe the land in that part is ſo low that we could not diſcern it.

In the afternoon, about one o'clock, we ſaw what was firſt ſuppoſed to be a rock; but it was found to be a dead whale, which ſome Aſiatics had killed, and were then towing aſhore. They ſeemed to endeavour to conceal themſelves behind the fiſh, in order to avoid being ſeen by us. This, however, was unneceſſary, for we proceeded on our courſe without taking notice of them. On the 4th, at break of day, we hauled to the north-weſtward, for the purpoſe of gaining a nearer view of the inlet ſeen the day before; but the wind, not long after, veering to that direction, the deſign was abandoned; and, ſteering towards the ſouth along the coaſt, we paſſed two bays, each about ſix miles deep. The moſt northerly one is ſituate before a hill, which is rounder than any other we had obſerved upon the coaſt. There is an iſland lying before the other bay. It is a matter of doubt whether there is a ſufficient depth of water for ſhips in either of theſe bays, as, when we edged in for the ſhore, we conſtantly met with ſhoal water. This part of the country is extremely naked and hilly. In ſeveral places on the lower grounds, next the ſea, were the habitations of the natives, near all of

which were erected ſtages of bones, like thoſe before-mentioned. This day, at noon, our latitude was 64° 38′ north, and our longitude 188° 15′ eaſt; the neareſt part of the ſhore was at the diſtance of three or four leagues; and the moſt ſouthern point of the continent in ſight bore ſouth 48° weſt.

The wind, by this time, had veered to the north, and blew a light breeze: the weather was clear, and the air ſharp. The Commodore did not think proper to follow the direction of the coaſt, as he perceived that it inclined weſtward towards the gulph of Anadir, into which he had no motive for going. He therefore ſteered a ſoutherly courſe, that he might have a ſight of the iſle of St. Lawrence, which had been diſcovered by Beering. This iſland was quickly ſeen by us; and, at eight in the evening, it bore ſouth 20° eaſt, ſuppoſed to be at the diſtance of eleven leagues. The moſt ſoutherly point of the main land was, at that time, twelve leagues diſtant, bearing ſouth 83° weſt. Captain Cook conjectured, that this was the point which is called by Beering the eaſtern point of Suchotſki, or Cape Tſchukotſkoi; an appellation which he gave it with ſome propriety, becauſe the natives, who ſaid they were of the nation of the Tſchutſki, came off to him from this part of the coaſt. Its latitude is 64° 13′ north, and its longitude 186° 36′ eaſt.

The

The more the Captain was convinced of his being at preſent upon the Aſiatic coaſt, the more he was at a loſs to reconcile his obſervations with Mr. Stæhlin's map of the New Northern Archipelago; and he could find no other method of accounting for ſo important a difference, than by ſuppoſing that he had miſtaken ſome part of what Mr. Stæhlin denominates the iſland of Alaſchka for the continent of America, and had miſſed the channel by which they are ſeparated. But even on that ſuppoſition there would ſtill have been a conſiderable variation. The Captain conſidered it as an affair of ſome conſequence to clear up this point during the preſent ſeaſon, that he might have only one object in view in the following one. And as theſe northerly iſlands were ſaid to abound with wood, he had ſome hopes, if he ſhould find them, of procuring a competent ſupply of that article, of which we began to ſtand in great need. With this view he ſteered over for the coaſt of America; and the next day, about five o'clock in the afternoon, land was ſeen bearing ſouth three quarters eaſt, which we imagined was Anderſon's Iſland, or ſome other land near it. On Sunday the 6th, at four in the morning, we had a ſight of the American coaſt, near Sledge Iſland; and, at ſix in the evening of the ſame day, that iſland was at the diſtance of about ten leagues, bearing north 6° eaſt, and the moſt eaſterly land in view bore north 49° eaſt. If any part of what

Captain

Captain Cook had conjectured to be the coaſt of the American continent, could poſſibly be the iſland of Alaſchka, it was that now in ſight; in which caſe he muſt have miſſed the channel between it and the main land, by ſteering towards the weſt, inſtead of the eaſt, after he had firſt fallen in with it. He was, therefore, at no loſs where to go, for the purpoſe of clearing up theſe doubts.

On the 7th, at eight o'clock in the evening, we had made a near approach to the land. Sledge Iſland bore north 85° weſt, about eight leagues diſtant; and the eaſtern part of the coaſt bore north 70° eaſt, with elevated land in the direction of eaſt by north. At this time we perceived a light on ſhore; and two canoes, with people in them, came off towards us. We brought to, in order to give them time to approach; but they reſiſted all our tokens of amity, and kept at the diſtance of a quarter of a mile. We therefore left them, and proceeded along the coaſt. The next morning, at one o'clock, obſerving that the water ſhoaled pretty faſt, we anchored in ten fathoms, and remained in that ſituation till day-light came on. We then weighed, and purſued our courſe along the coaſt, which trended eaſt, and eaſt half ſouth. At ſeven o'clock in the evening we were abreaſt of a point, ſituated in the longitude of 197° eaſt, and in the latitude of 64° 21′ north; beyond which the coaſt aſſumes a more northerly direction.

direction. At eight this point, which received the appellation of Cape Darby, bore ſouth 62° weſt; the moſt northern land we had in view, bore north 32° eaſt; and the diſtance of the neareſt part of the ſhore was one league. In this ſituation we let go our anchors in thirteen fathoms, over a muddy bottom.

On the 9th, at break of day, we weighed, and made ſail along the coaſt. We now ſaw land, which we ſuppoſed to be two iſlands; the one bearing eaſt, the other ſouth 70° eaſt. Not long afterwards, we found ourſelves near a coaſt covered with wood; a pleaſing ſight, to which we had not been lately accuſtomed. As we advanced northward, land was ſeen in the direction of north-eaſt, half north, which proved a continuation of the coaſt upon which we now were: we likewiſe perceived high land over the iſlands, apparently, at a conſiderable diſtance beyond them. This was imagined to be the continent, and the other land the iſle of Alaſchka; but it was already a matter of doubt, whether we ſhould diſcover a paſſage between them, for the water gradually ſhoaled, as we proceeded further towards the north. In conſequence of this, two boats were diſpatched a-head to ſound; and the Commodore ordered the Diſcovery, as ſhe drew the leaſt water, to lead, keeping nearly in the middle channel, between the coaſt and the moſt northerly iſland. In this manner we continued our courſe,

till three o'clock in the afternoon, when, having paſſed the iſland, our ſoundings did not exceed three fathoms and a half, and the Reſolution once brought up the mud from the bottom. In no part of the channel could a greater depth of water be found, though we had founded it from one ſide to the other; we therefore deemed it high time to return.

At this time, a head-land on the weſtern ſhore, to which the name of Bald-head was given, was about one league diſtant, bearing north by weſt. The coaſt extended beyond it as far as north-eaſt by north, where it appeared to terminate in a point; behind which, the coaſt of the high land, that was ſeen over the iſlands, ſtretched itſelf. The ſhore on the weſtern ſide of Bald-head, forms a bay, in the bottom of which is a beach, where we perceived many huts of the natives.

We continued to ply back during the whole night; and, by day-break on the 10th, had deepened our water ſix fathoms. At nine o'clock, when we were about three miles from the weſt ſhore, Captain Cook, accompanied by Mr. King, went with two boats, in ſearch of wood and water. They landed in that part, where the coaſt projects into a bluff head, compoſed of perpendicular *ſtrata* of a dark-blue rock, intermixed with glimmer and quartz. Adjoining to the beach is a narrow border of land, which was at this time covered with long graſs, and where they

obſerved ſome angelica. The ground, beyond this, riſes with ſome abruptneſs; towards the top of this elevation, they found a heath, that abounded with berries of various kinds; further onward the country was rather level, and thinly covered with ſmall ſpruce-trees, birch, and willows. They ſaw the tracks of foxes and deer upon the beach; in many parts of which, there was a great abundance of drift-wood: there was alſo no want of freſh-water.

Our gentlemen and their attendants having returned on board, the Commodore had thoughts of bringing the ſhips to an anchor here; but the wind then ſhifting to north-eaſt, and blowing rather on this ſhore, he ſtretched over to the oppoſite one, expecting to find wood there likewiſe. At eight in the evening, we anchored near the ſouthern end of the moſt northerly iſland, for ſuch we then imagined it to be. The next morning, however, we found that it was a peninſula, connected with the continent by a low iſthmus, on each ſide of which, a bay is formed by the coaſt. We plied into the ſouthernmoſt of theſe bays, and caſt anchor again, about twelve o'clock, in five fathoms water, over a muddy bottom; the point of the peninſula, to which the appellation of Cape Denbigh was given, being one league diſtant, in the direction of north 68° weſt.

We obſerved on the peninſula, ſeveral of the natives; and one of them came off in a ſmall canoe.

Captain Cook gave this man a knife and ſome beads, with which he appeared to be well pleaſed; we made ſigns to him to bring us ſome proviſions, upon which he inſtantly quitted us, and paddled towards the ſhore. Happening to meet another man coming off, who had two dried ſalmon, he got them from him; and when he returned to our ſhip, he refuſed to give them to any body except Captain Cook. Some of our people fancied, that he aſked for him under the name of *Capitane*; but, in this, they were perhaps miſtaken. Others of the inhabitants came off ſoon afterwards, and gave us a few dried fiſh, in exchange for ſuch trifles as we had to barter with them. They ſhewed no diſlike for tobacco, but they were moſt deſirous of knives.

In the afternoon, Mr. Gore was diſpatched to the peninſula, to procure wood and water; of the former of which articles, we obſerved great plenty upon the beach. At the ſame time, a boat from each of the ſhips was ſent to ſound round the bay; and at three o'clock, the wind freſhening at north-eaſt, we weighed anchor, and endeavoured to work further in. But that was quickly found to be impracticable, by reaſon of the ſhoals, which extended entirely round the bay, to the diſtance of upwards of two miles from the ſhore; as the officers, who had been ſent out for the purpoſe of ſounding, reported. We therefore ſtood off and on with the ſhips, waiting

for Lieutenant Gore, who returned about eight o'clock in the evening, with the launch loaded with wood. He informed the Commodore, that he had found but little freſh-water, and that the wood could not be procured without difficulty, on account of the boats grounding at ſome diſtance from the beach. As this was the caſe, we ſtood back to the other ſhore; and the next morning, at eight, all the boats, and a detachment of men, with an officer, were ſent to get wood from the place where Captain Cook had landed on the 10th.

After having continued, for ſome time, to ſtand off and on with the ſhips, we at length caſt anchor in leſs than five fathoms, at the diſtance of half a league from the coaſt, whoſe ſouthern point bore ſouth 26° weſt. Cape Denbigh was about twenty-ſix miles diſtant, bearing ſouth 72° eaſt; Bald Head was nine leagues off, in the direction of north 60° eaſt; and the iſland near the eaſtern ſhore, ſouth of Cape Denbigh, named by Captain Cook, Beſborough Iſland, was fifteen leagues diſtant, bearing ſouth 52° eaſt.

This being a very open road, and therefore not a ſecure ſtation for the ſhips, the Commodore reſolved not to wait till our ſtock of water was completed, as that would take up ſome time; but only to furniſh both ſhips with wood, and afterwards to ſeek a more commodious place for the former article. Our people carried off the

drift-wood that lay on the beach, and performed that buſineſs with great expedition; for, as the wind blew along the ſhore, the boats were enabled to ſail both ways. In the afternoon Captain Cook went on ſhore, and took a walk into the country; which, in thoſe parts where there was no wood, abounded with heath, and other plants, ſeveral of which had plenty of berries, all ripe. Scarce a ſingle plant was in flower. The underwood, ſuch as birch, alders, and willows, occaſioned walking to be very troubleſome among the trees, which were all ſpruce, and none of which exceeded ſeven or eight inches in diameter; but ſome were obſerved lying on the beach, that were above twice that ſize. All the drift-wood that we ſaw in theſe northern parts was fir.

The following day, which was Sunday the 13th, a family of the natives came near the ſpot where our people were occupied in taking off wood. The Captain ſaw only the huſband and wife, and their child, beſides a fourth perſon, who was the moſt deformed cripple he had ever ſeen. The huſband was nearly blind, and neither he, nor his wife, were ſuch well-looking people as many of thoſe whom we had met with on this coaſt. Both of them had their lower lips perforated; and they were in poſſeſſion of ſome glaſs-beads, reſembling thoſe we had ſeen before among their neighbours. Iron was the article that pleaſed them moſt. For four knives which had been

formed

formed out of an old iron-hoop, the Captain obtained from them near four hundred pounds weight of fiſh, that had been lately caught by them. Some of theſe were trout, and others were, with reſpect to ſize and taſte, ſomewhat between a herring and a mullet. The Captain gave a few beads to the child, who was a female; upon which the mother immediately burſt into tears, then the father, next after him the cripple, and at laſt, to add the finiſhing ſtroke to the concert, the child herſelf. This muſic, however, was not of long duration.

Mr. King had, on the preceding day, been in company with the ſame family. His account of this interview is to the following purport: While he attended the wooding party, a canoe, filled with natives, approached, out of which an elderly man and woman (the huſband and wife above-mentioned) came aſhore. Mr. King preſented a ſmall knife to the woman, and promiſed to give her a much larger one in exchange for ſome fiſh. She made ſigns to him to follow her. After he had proceeded with them about a mile, the man fell down as he was croſſing a ſtony beach, and happened to cut his foot very much. This occaſioned Mr. King to ſtop; upon which the woman pointed to her huſband's eyes, which were covered with a thick, whitiſh film. He afterwards kept cloſe to his wife, who took care to apprize him of the obſtacles in his way. The

woman had a child on her back, wrapped up in the hood of her jacket. After walking about two miles, they arrived at an open ſkin-boat, which was turned on one ſide, the convex part towards the wind, and was made to ſerve for the habitation of this family. Mr. King now performed a remarkable operation on the man's eyes. He was firſt deſired to hold his breath, then to breathe on the diſtempered eyes, and afterwards to ſpit on them. The woman then took both the hands of Mr. King, and preſſing them to the man's ſtomach, held them there for ſome time, while ſhe recounted ſome melancholy hiſtory reſpecting her family; ſometimes pointing to her huſband, ſometimes to her child, and at other times to the cripple, who was related to her. Mr. King purchaſed all the fiſh they had, which conſiſted of excellent ſalmon, ſalmon-trout, and mullet. Theſe fiſh were faithfully delivered to the perſon he ſent for them.

The woman was ſhort and ſquat, and her viſage was plump and round. She wore a jacket made of deer ſkin, with a large hood, and had on a pair of wide boots. She was punctured from the lip to the chin. Her huſband was well made, and about five feet two inches in height. His hair was black and ſhort, and he had but little beard. His complexion was of a light copper caſt. He had two holes in his lower lip, in which, however, he had no ornaments. The

teeth

teeth of both of them were black, and appeared as if they had been filed down level with the gums.

Before night, on the 13th, we had amply furniſhed the ſhips with wood, and had conveyed on board about a dozen tuns of water to each. On the 14th a party was detached on ſhore to cut brooms, and likewiſe the branches of ſpruce-trees for brewing beer. About twelve o'clock all our people were taken on board, for the wind freſhening had raiſed ſo heavy a ſurf on the beach, that our boats could not continue to land without extreme difficulty and danger.

As doubts were ſtill entertained whether the coaſt, upon which we now were, belonged to an iſland, or to the continent of America, lieutenant King was diſpatched by the Commodore, with two boats, well manned and armed, to make ſuch a ſearch as might tend to remove all difference of opinion on the ſubject. He was inſtructed to proceed towards the north as far as the extreme point ſeen on Wedneſday the 9th, or a little further, if he ſhould find it neceſſary; to land there, and, from the heights, endeavour to diſcover whether the land he was then upon, imagined to be the iſland of Alaſchka, was really an iſland, or was connected with the land to the eaſtward, ſuppoſed to be the American continent. If it proved to be an iſland, he was to examine the depth of water in the channel between

tween it and the continent, and which way the flood-tide came: but, if he ſhould find the two lands united, he was to return immediately to the ſhip. He was directed not to be abſent longer than four or five days; and it was alſo mentioned in his inſtructions, that, if any unforeſeen or unavoidable accident ſhould force our ſhips off the coaſt, the rendezvous was to be at the harbour of Samganoodha.

On Tueſday the 15th, the ſhips removed over to the bay on the ſouth eaſtern ſide of Cape Denbigh, where we caſt anchor in the afternoon. Not long after, ſeveral of the inhabitants came off in canoes, and gave us ſome dried ſalmon in exchange for trifling articles. Early the next morning, nine men, each in a ſeparate canoe, paid us a viſit, with the ſole view of gratifying their curioſity. They approached the ſhip with caution, and drawing up abreaſt of each other, under our ſtern, favoured us with a ſong; while one of their number made many ludicrous motions with his hands and body, and another beat upon a ſort of drum. There was nothing ſavage, either in the ſong, or the geſtures with which it was accompanied. There ſeemed to be no difference, either with reſpect to ſize or features, between theſe people, and thoſe whom we had ſeen on every other part of the coaſt, except King George's Sound. Their dreſs, which chiefly conſiſted of the ſkins of deer, was made after

the

the ſame mode; and they had adopted the practice of perforating their lower lips, and affixing ornaments to them.

The habitations of theſe Americans were ſituated cloſe to the beach. They conſiſt merely of a ſloping roof, without any ſide-walls, formed of logs, and covered with earth and graſs. The floor is likewiſe laid with logs. The entrance is at one end, and the fire-place is juſt within it. A ſmall hole is made near the door of the hut, for the purpoſe of letting out the ſmoke.

A party of men was diſpatched, this morning, to the peninſula for brooms and ſpruce. Half the remainder of the people of both ſhips were, at the ſame time, permitted to go aſhore and gather berries. Theſe returned on board about twelve o'clock, and the other half then landed for the ſame purpoſe. The berries found here were hurtle-berries, heath-berries, partridge-berries, and wild currant-berries. Captain Cook alſo went aſhore himſelf, and took a walk over part of the peninſula. He met with very good graſs in ſeveral places, and ſcarcely obſerved a ſingle ſpot on which ſome vegetable was not growing. The low land by which this peninſula is united to the continent, abounds with narrow creeks, and likewiſe with ponds of water, ſeveral of which were at this time frozen over. There were numbers of buſtards and geeſe, but they were ſo ſhy, that it was impoſſible to get within muſquet-ſhot of them. Some ſnipes

were

were alſo ſeen; and, on the higher grounds, were partridges of two ſpecies; where there was wood, muſquitoes were numerous. Some of the officers, who went further into the country than Captain Cook did, met with ſome of the natives of both ſexes, who treated them with civility and kindneſs.

The Commodore was of opinion, that this peninſula had been an iſland in ſome diſtant period; for there were marks of the ſea having formerly flowed over the iſthmus; and even at preſent, it appeared to be kept out by a bank of ſand, ſtones, and wood, which the waves had thrown up. It was manifeſt from this bank, that the land here encroached upon the ſea, and it was not difficult to trace its gradual formation.

Lieutenant King returned from his expedition about ſeven o'clock this evening. He had ſet out at eight o'clock at night, on the 14th. The crews of the boats rowed without intermiſſion towards the land, till one in the morning of the 15th. They then ſet their ſails, and ſtood acroſs the bay, which the coaſt forms to the weſtward of Bald-Head. They afterwards, about three o'clock, again made uſe of their oars, and, by two in the afternoon, had got within two miles of Bald-Head, under the lee of the high land. At that time all the men in the boat belonging to the Reſolution, except two, were ſo oppreſſed with fatigue and ſleep, that Mr. King's utmoſt endeavours

vours to make them put on were perfectly ineffectual. They, at length, were ſo far exhauſted, as to drop their oars, and fall aſleep at the bottom of the boat. In conſequence of this, Mr. King, and two gentlemen who were with him, were obliged to lay hold of the oars; and they landed, a little after three o'clock, between Bald-Head and a point that projects to the eaſtward.

Mr. King, upon his landing, aſcended the heights, from which he could ſee the two coaſts join, and that the inlet terminated in a ſmall creek or river, before which there were banks of ſand or mud, and in every part ſhoal water. The land, for ſome diſtance towards the north, was low and ſwampy; then it roſe in hills; and the perfect junction of thoſe, on each ſide of the inlet, was traced without the leaſt difficulty.

From the elevated ſituation in which Mr. King took his ſurvey of the Sound, he could diſcern many ſpacious vallies, with rivers flowing through them, well wooded, and bounded by hills of a moderate height. One of the rivers towards the north-weſt ſeemed to be conſiderable; and he was inclined to ſuppoſe, from its direction, that it diſcharged itſelf into the ſea at the head of the bay. Some of his people, penetrating beyond this into the country, found the trees to be of a larger ſize the further they proceeded.

To this inlet Captain Cook gave the name of Norton's Sound, in honour of Sir Fletcher Norton,

ton, now Lord Grantley, a near relation of Mr. King. It extends northward as far as the latitude of 64° 55′ north. The bay, wherein our ſhips were now at anchor, is ſituated on the ſouth-eaſtern ſide of it, and is denominated *Chacktoole* by the natives. It is not a very excellent ſtation, being expoſed to the ſouth and ſouth-weſt winds. Nor is a harbour to be met with in all this Sound. We were ſo fortunate, however, as to have the wind from the north-eaſt and the north, during the whole time of our continuance here, with very fine weather. This afforded an opportunity of making a great number of lunar obſervations, the mean reſult of which gave 197° 13′ eaſt, as the longitude of the anchoring-place on the weſtern-ſide of the Sound, while its latitude was 64° 31′ north. With reſpect to the tides, the night-flood roſe two or three feet, and the day-flood was ſcarcely perceivable.

Captain Cook being now perfectly convinced, that Mr. Stæhlin's map was extremely erroneous, and having reſtored the continent of America to the ſpace which that gentleman had occupied with his imaginary iſland of Alaſchka, thought it now high time to quit theſe northerly regions, and retire to ſome place for the winter, where he might obtain proviſions and refreſhments. He did not conſider Petropaulowſka, or the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul in Kamtſchatka, as likely to furniſh a ſufficient ſupply. He had likewiſe

wiſe other reaſons for not going thither at preſent; the principal of which was, his great unwillingneſs to remain inactive for ſix or ſeven months, which would have been the conſequence of paſſing the winter in any of theſe northern countries. He at length concluded, that no ſituation was ſo convenient for our purpoſe as the Sandwich Iſlands. To them, therefore, he formed a reſolution of repairing. But a ſupply of water being neceſſary before he could execute that deſign, he determined, with a view of procuring this eſſential article, to ſearch the coaſt of America for a harbour, by proceeding along it to the ſouthward. If he ſhould not meet with ſucceſs in that ſearch, his intention was to reach Samganoodha, which was appointed for our place of rendezvous, in caſe the ſhips ſhould happen to ſeparate.

CHAP.

## CHAP. XI.

*Stuart's Iſland diſcovered—Its Situation, Extent, &c.—Cape Stephens—Point Shallow-Water—Shoals on the Coaſt of North-America—Clerke's Iſland—Gore's Iſland—Pinnacle Iſland—The Reſolution ſprings a Leak—The Ships arrive at Oonalaſhka—Plentiful Supplies of Fiſh—Intercourſe with the Natives, and the Ruſſian Traders—Mr. Iſmyloff comes on board—Intelligence received from him—Two Charts produced by him—Account of the Iſlands viſited by the Ruſſians—Of their Settlement at Oonalaſhka—Deſcription of the Natives—Their Dreſs—Food—Manner of Building—Manufactures—Canoes—Implements for Hunting and Fiſhing—Fiſh and other Sea Animals—Water Fowls—Land-Birds—Quadrupeds Vegetables—Stones—Repoſitories of the Dead—Diſeaſes—Reſemblance of the Inhabitants of this Side of America to the Eſquimaux and Greenlanders—Tides, Longitude, &c.*

IN the morning of the 17th of September, we weighed anchor with a light eaſterly breeze, and ſteering to the ſouthward, attempted to paſs within Beſborough Iſland; but, though it is ſix or ſeven miles diſtant from the continent, we were prevented, by meeting with ſhoal water. Having but little wind all the day, we did not

paſs

paſs that iſland before it was dark; and the night was ſpent under an eaſy ſail.

At day-break, on the 18th, we reſumed our progreſs along the coaſt. At noon, our ſoundings were no more than five fathoms. Beſborough Iſland, at this time, bore north 42° eaſt; the moſt ſoutherly land in ſight, which alſo proved to be an iſland, bore ſouth 66° weſt; the paſſage between it and the continent, was in the direction of ſouth 40° weſt, and the neareſt land was at the diſtance of about two miles.

We continued to ſteer for this paſſage, till the boats which were a-head made the ſignal for having no more than three fathoms water. In conſequence of this, we hauled without the iſland, and diſplayed the ſignal for the Reſolution's boat to keep between the ſhore and the ſhips.

This iſland, to which the name of Stuart's Iſland was given, lies in the latitude of 63° 35′ north, and is ſeventeen leagues diſtant from Cape Denbigh, in the direction of ſouth 27° weſt. It is ſix or ſeven leagues in circumference. Though ſome parts of it are of a moderate height, yet, in general, it is low, with ſome rocks off the weſtern part. The greateſt part of the coaſt of the continent is low land, but we perceived high land up the country. It forms a point, oppoſite the iſland, which was diſtinguiſhed by the name of Cape Stephens, and is ſituated in the latitude of 63° 33′ north, and in the longitude of

197° 41′ eaſt. Some drift wood was obſerved on the ſhores, both of the iſland and of the continent; but not a ſingle tree was ſeen growing upon either. Veſſels might anchor, upon occaſion, between the continent and the north-eaſt ſide of this iſland, in a depth of five fathoms, ſheltered from the eaſterly, weſterly, and ſoutherly winds. But this ſtation would be entirely expoſed to the northerly winds, the land, in that direction, being too remote to afford any ſecurity. Before we reached Stuart's Iſland, we paſſed two little iſlands, ſituate between us and the main land; and as we ranged along the coaſt, ſeveral of the natives made their appearance upon the ſhore, and, by ſigns, ſeemed to invite us to approach.

We were no ſooner without the iſland, than we ſteered ſouth by weſt, for the moſt ſouthern part of the continent in ſight, till eight in the evening, when, the depth of water having decreaſed from ſix fathoms to leſs than four, we tacked and ſtood to the northward into five fathoms, and then paſſed the night in ſtanding off and on. At the time we tacked, the ſouthernmoſt point of land above-mentioned, which we named Point Shallow-Water, bore ſouth half eaſt, at the diſtance of ſeven leagues. On the 19th, at day-break, we reſumed our ſoutherly courſe; but ſhoal water ſoon obliged us to haul more to the weſtward. We were at length ſo far advanced upon the bank, that we could not hold a north-

north-weſt courſe, as we ſometimes met with only four fathoms. The wind blowing freſh at eaſt-north-eaſt, it was now high time to endeavour to find a greater depth of water, and to quit a coaſt upon which we could no longer navigate with ſafety. We therefore hauled the wind to the northward, and the water gradually increaſed in depth to eight fathoms.

At the time of our hauling the wind, we were about twelve leagues diſtant from the continent, and nine to the weſt of Stuart's Iſland. We ſaw no land to the ſouthward of Point Shallow-Water, which Captain Cook judged to lie in the latitude of 63° north; ſo that between this latitude and Shoal Neſs, in latitude 60°, the coaſt has not been explored. It is probably acceſſible only to boats, or very ſmall veſſels; or, if there are channels for veſſels of greater magnitude, it would require ſome time to find them. From the maſt-head, the ſea within us appeared to be checquered with ſhoals; the water was very muddy and diſcoloured, and much freſher than at any of the places where our ſhips had lately anchored. From this we inferred, that a conſiderable river runs into the ſea, in this unexplored part.

After we had got into eight fathoms water, we ſteered to the weſtward, and afterwards more ſoutherly, for the land diſcovered by us on the 5th of September, which at noon on the 20th,

bore ſouth-weſt by weſt, at the diſtance of ten or eleven leagues. We had now a freſh gale at north, and, at intervals, ſhowers of hail and ſnow, with a pretty high ſea. To the land before us, the Commodore gave the appellation of Clerke's Iſland. It ſtands in the latitude of 63° 15′, and in the longitude of 190° 30′. It ſeemed to be an iſland of conſiderable extent, in which are ſeveral hills, all connected by low ground, ſo that it looks, at a diſtance, like a group of iſlands. Near its eaſtern part is a little iſland, which is remarkable for having on it three elevated rocks. Both the greater iſland, and this ſmaller one, were inhabited.

About ſix o'clock in the afternoon, we reached the northern point of Clerke's Iſland; and having ranged along its coaſt till dark, we brought to during the night. Early the next morning, we again ſtood in for the coaſt, and proceeded along it in queſt of an harbour, till twelve o'clock, when finding no probability of ſucceſs, we left it and ſteered ſouth-ſouth-weſt, for the land diſcovered by us on the 29th of July; having a freſh gale at north, accompanied with ſhowers of ſnow and ſleet.

On Wedneſday the 23d, at day-break, the land above-mentioned made its appearance, bearing ſouth-weſt, at the diſtance of ſix or ſeven leagues. From this point of view, it reſembled a cluſter of iſlands; but it was found to be only

one, of about thirty miles in extent, in the direction of north-weſt and ſouth-eaſt; the ſouth eaſtern extremity being Cape Upright, which we have mentioned before. The iſland is narrow, particularly at the low necks of land by which the hills are connected. Captain Cook afterwards found, that it was entirely unknown to the Ruſſians, and therefore, conſidering it as a diſcovery of our own, he named it Gore's Iſland. It appeared to be barren and deſtitute of inhabitants, at leaſt we ſaw none. Nor did we obſerve ſuch a number of birds about it, as we had ſeen when we firſt diſcovered it. But we perceived ſome ſea-otters, an animal which we had not found to the north of this latitude. About twelve miles from Cape Upright, in the direction of ſouth 72° weſt, ſtands a ſmall iſland, whoſe lofty ſummit terminates in ſeveral pinnacle rocks, for which reaſon it obtained the name of Pinnacle Iſland.

At two o'clock in the afternoon, after we had paſſed Cape Upright, we ſteered ſouth-eaſt by ſouth, for Samganoodha, with a gentle breeze at north-north-weſt, being reſolved to loſe no more time in ſearching for an harbour among iſlands, which we now began to ſuſpect had no exiſtence; at leaſt, not in the latitude and longitude in which they have been placed by modern delineators of charts. On the 24th, in the

evening, the wind veered to ſouth-weſt and ſouth, and increaſed to a freſh gale.

We continued our eaſterly courſe till eight in the morning of the 25th, when in the longitude of 191° 10′, and in the latitude of 58° 32′, we tacked and ſtood to the weſtward; ſoon after which, the gale increaſing, we were reduced to two courſes, and cloſe-reefed main-top-ſails. In a ſhort time after, the Reſolution ſprung a leak, under the ſtarboard buttock, which was ſo conſiderable, as to keep one pump conſtantly employed. We would not venture to put the ſhip upon the other tack, from the apprehenſion of getting upon the ſhoals that lie to the north-weſt of Cape Newenham; but continued to ſteer towards the weſt, till ſix in the evening of Saturday the 26th, when we wore and ſtood to the eaſtward; and then the leak gave us no farther trouble. This proved, that it was above the water-line, which gave us great ſatisfaction. The gale had now ceaſed, but the wind continued at ſouth, and ſouth-weſt, for ſome days longer.

At length, on Friday the 2d of October, at day-break, we ſaw the iſle of Oonalaſhka, in a ſouth-eaſt direction. But as the land was obſcured by a thick haze, we were not certain with reſpect to our ſituation till noon, when the obſerved latitude determined it. We hauled into a bay, ten miles to the weſtward of Samganoodha, known by the appellation of Egoochſhac; but

but finding very deep water, we ſpeedily left it. The natives viſited us at different times, bringing with them dried ſalmon, and other fiſh, which our ſailors received in exchange for tobacco. Only a few days before, every ounce of tobacco that remained in the ſhip, had been diſtributed among them, and the quantity was not half ſufficient to anſwer their demands. Notwithſtanding this, ſo thoughtleſs and improvident a being is an Engliſh ſailor, that they were as profuſe in making their bargains, as if we had arrived at a port in Virginia; by which means, in leſs than two days, the value of this commodity was lowered above a thouſand *per cent.*

The next day, at one o'clock in the afternoon, we anchored in the harbour of Samganoodha, and, on the morning of the 4th, the carpenters were employed in ripping off the ſheathing of and under the wale of the Reſolution on the ſtarboard ſide. Many of the ſeams were found entirely open; it was therefore not to be wondered at, that ſo much water had got into the ſhip. We cleared the fiſh and ſpirit rooms, and the after-hold; and diſpoſed things in ſuch a manner, that, in caſe of any future leaks of the ſame nature, the water might find its way to the pumps. Beſides this work, and completing our ſtock of water, we cleared the fore-hold, and took in a quantity of ballaſt.

The vegetables we had met with when we were here before, were now, for the moſt part, in a ſtate of decay. There being great plenty of berries, one-third of the people, by turns, had permiſſion to go a-ſhore and gather them. Conſiderable quantities of them were alſo brought to us by the inhabitants. If there were any ſeeds of the ſcurvy, among the people of either ſhip, theſe berries, and the uſe of ſpruce beer, which they were allowed to drink every other day, effectually eradicated them.

We likewiſe procured abundance of fiſh; at firſt, chiefly ſalmon, both freſh and dried, which the natives brought us. Some of the freſh ſalmon was in the higheſt perfection; but there was one ſort, which, from the figure of its head, we called hook-noſed, that was but indifferent. Drawing the ſeine ſeveral times, at the head of the bay, we caught many ſalmon trout, and a halibut that weighed two hundred and fifty-four pounds. We afterwards had recourſe to hooks and lines. A boat was ſent out every morning, which ſeldom returned without eight or ten halibut, a quantity more than ſufficient to ſerve all our people. Theſe fiſh were excellent, and there were few who did not prefer them to ſalmon. Thus we not only obtained a ſupply of fiſh for preſent conſumption, but had ſome to carry with us to ſea.

Cap-

Captain Cook received, on the 8th, by the hands of a native of Oonalaſhka, named Derramouſhk, a very ſingular preſent, conſidering the place we were in. It was a rye loaf, or rather a pye in the form of a loaf, as it encloſed ſome ſalmon, well ſeaſoned with pepper. This man had brought a ſimilar preſent for Captain Clerke, and a note for each of the Captains, written in a character which none of us underſtood. It was natural to imagine, that theſe two preſents were from ſome Ruſſians now in our neighbourhood, and therefore the Captains ſent, by the ſame meſſenger, to theſe unknown friends, a few bottles of rum, wine and porter, which they ſuppoſed would be highly acceptable. Captain Cook alſo ſent, in company with Derramouſhk, Corporal Lediard, of the marines, an intelligent man, for the purpoſe of gaining farther information; with orders, that if he met with any Ruſſians, he ſhould endeavour to make them underſtand, that we were Engliſhmen, the friends and allies of their nation.

On Saturday the 10th, Corporal Lediard returned with three Ruſſian ſeamen, or furriers, who, with ſeveral others, reſided at Egoochſhac, where they had ſome ſtore-houſes, a dwelling-houſe, and a ſloop of about thirty tons burthen. One of theſe Ruſſians was either Maſter or Mate of this veſſel. They were all three intelligent, well-behaved men, and extremely ready to give

us all the information we could deſire. But, for want of an interpreter, we found it very difficult to underſtand each other. They appeared to have a perfect knowledge of the attempts which their countrymen had made to navigate the Frozen Ocean, and of the diſcoveries that had been made from Kamtſchatka, by Beering, Tſcherikoff, and Spangenberg. But they had not the leaſt idea to what part of the world Mr. Stæhlin's map referred, when it was laid before them. When Captain Cook pointed out Kamtſchatka, and ſome other places, upon this map, they aſked him whether he had ſeen the iſlands there repreſented; and, on his anſwering in the negative, one of them put his finger upon a part of the map, where a number of iſlands are laid down, and ſaid, that he had cruiſed there in ſearch of land, but could never meet with any. The Captain then ſhewed them his own chart, and found that they were ſtrangers to every part of the coaſt of America, except that which lies oppoſite this iſland.

One of theſe men ſaid, that he had been with Beering in his American voyage; but he muſt then have been very young; for even now, at the diſtance of thirty-ſeven years, he had not the appearance of being aged. Never was greater reſpect paid to the memory of any eminent perſon, than by theſe men to that of Beering. The trade in which they are engaged, is very advantageous,

tageous, and its being undertaken and extended to the eaſtward of Kamtſchatka, was the immediate reſult of the ſecond voyage of that diſtinguiſhed navigator, whoſe misfortunes proved the ſource of much private benefit to individuals, and of public utility to the Ruſſian empire. And yet, if his diſtreſſes had not accidentally carried him to the iſland which bears his name, where he ended his life, and from whence the remainder of his ſhip's crew brought back ſpecimens of its valuable furs, the Ruſſians would probably have undertaken no future voyages, which could lead them to make diſcoveries in this ſea, towards the American coaſt. Indeed, after his time, their miniſtry ſeem to have paid leſs attention to this object; and, for what diſcoveries have been ſince made, we are principally indebted to the enterprizing ſpirit of private merchants, encouraged, however, by the ſuperintending care of the court of Peterſburg.

The three Ruſſians having remained all night with the Commodore, viſited Captain Clerke the following morning, and then departed, perfectly ſatisfied with the reception they had met with. They promiſed to return in a few days, and bring with them a chart of the iſlands ſituate between Kamtſchatka and Oonalaſhka.

In the evening of the 14th, while Captain Cook and Mr. Webber were at a village, not far from Samganoodha, a Ruſſian landed there, who proved

proved to be the principal perſon among his countrymen in this and the adjacent iſles. His name was Eraſim Gregorioff Sin Iſmyloff. He arrived in a canoe that carried three perſons, attended by twenty or thirty ſmaller canoes, each conducted by one man. Immediately after landing, they conſtructed a ſmall tent for Iſmyloff, of materials which they had brought with them, and they afterwards made others for themſelves, of their canoes and paddles, which they covered with graſs. Iſmyloff having invited the Captain and Mr. Webber into his tent, ſet before them ſome dried ſalmon and berries. He appeared to be a man of ſenſe; and the Captain felt no ſmall mortification in not being able to converſe with him, except by ſigns, with the aſſiſtance of figures, and other characters. The Captain requeſted him to favour him with his company on board the next day, and accordingly he came with all his attendants. He had, indeed, moved into the neighbourhood of our ſtation, for the expreſs purpoſe of waiting upon us.

Captain Cook was in hopes of receiving from him the chart which his three countrymen had promiſed, but he was diſappointed. However, Iſmyloff aſſured him he ſhould have it, and he kept his word. The Captain found him very well acquainted with the geography of thoſe parts, and with all the diſcoveries which had been made in this quarter by the Ruſſians. On ſeeing the

modern

modern maps, he inſtantly pointed out their errors: he ſaid, he had accompanied Lieutenant Syndo, or (as he called him) Synd, in his northern expedition; and, according to his account, they did not proceed farther than the Tſchukotſkoi Noſs, or rather than St. Lawrence's Bay; for he pointed on our chart to the very place where Captain Cook landed. From thence, he ſaid, they went to an iſland, in the latitude of 63° north, upon which they did not land. He did not recollect the name of that iſland; but the Captain conjectured, that it was the ſame with that to which the appellation of Clerke's Iſland had been given. To what place Synd repaired afterwards, or in what particular manner he employed the two years, during which, according to Iſmyloff, his reſearches laſted, he was either unable or unwilling to inform us. Perhaps he did not comprehend our inquiries on this point; and yet, in almoſt every other thing, we found means to make him underſtand us. This inclined us to ſuſpect, that he had not really been in this expedition, notwithſtanding what he had aſſerted.

Not only Iſmyloff, but alſo the others affirmed, that they were totally unacquainted with the American continent to the northward; and that neither Lieutenant Synd, nor any other Ruſſian, had ſeen it of late years. They called it by the ſame name which Mr. Stæhlin has affixed to his large iſland, that is Alaſchka.

Accord-

According to the information we obtained from Iſmyloff and his countrymen, the Ruſſians have made ſeveral attempts to gain a footing upon that part of the North American continent, that lies contiguous to Oonalaſhka and the adjacent iſlands, but have conſtantly been repulſed by the inhabitants, whom they repreſent as a very treacherous people. They made mention of two or three captains, or chief men, who had been murdered by them; and ſome of the Ruſſians ſhewed us wounds, which they declared they had received there.

Iſmyloff alſo informed us, that in the year 1773, an expedition had been undertaken into the Frozen Ocean in ſledges, over the ice, to three large iſlands, that are ſituate oppoſite the mouth of the river Kovyma. But a voyage which he ſaid he himſelf had performed, engaged our attention more than any other. He told us, that, on the 12th of May, 1771, he ſailed from Bolcheretzk, in Kamtſchatka, in a Ruſſian veſſel, to Mareekan, one of the Kuril Iſlands, where there is an harbour, and a Ruſſian ſettlement. From this iſland he proceeded to Japan, where his continuance appears to have been but ſhort; for, as ſoon as the Japaneſe knew that he and his companions profeſſed the Chriſtian faith, they made ſigns for them to depart; but did not, ſo far as we could underſtand him, offer any inſult or violence. From Japan he repaired to Canton,

in

in China; and from thence, in a French ſhip, to France. He then travelled to Peterſburg, and was afterwards ſent out again to Kamtſchatka. We could not learn what became of the veſſel in which he firſt embarked, nor what was the principal intention of the voyage. His being unable to ſpeak one word of the French language, rendered this ſtory rather ſuſpicious; he ſeemed clear, however, as to the times of his arrival at the different places, and of his departure from them, which he put down in writing.

The next morning (Friday the 16th), he offered Captain Cook a ſea-otter ſkin, which, he ſaid, was worth eighty roubles at Kamtſchatka. The Captain, however, thought proper to decline the offer; but accepted of ſome dried fiſh, and ſeveral baſkets of the lily, or *ſaranne* root. In the afternoon, Iſmyloff, after having dined with Captain Clerke, left us with all his retinue, but promiſed to return in a few days. Accordingly, on the 19th, he paid us another viſit, bringing with him the charts above-mentioned, which he permitted Captain Cook to copy; and the contents of which are the foundation of the following remarks.

Theſe charts were two in number, they were both manuſcripts, and bore every mark of authenticity. One of them comprehended the Penſhinſkian ſea; the coaſt of Tartary, as low as the latitude of 41° north; the Kurile Iſlands, and the peninſula

peninſula of Kamtſchatka. Since this chart had been made, Wawſeelee Irkeechoff, a naval captain, explored, in the year 1758, the coaſt of Tartary, from Okotſk, and the river Amur, to Japan, or 41° of northern latitude. We were informed by Mr. Iſmyloff, that a great part of the ſea-coaſt of Kamtſchatka had been corrected by himſelf; and he deſcribed the inſtrument uſed by him for that purpoſe, which muſt have been a theodolite. He alſo told us, that there were only two harbours proper for ſhipping, on all the eaſtern coaſt of Kamtſchatka, viz. the bay of Awatſka, and the river Olutora, in the bottom of the gulph of the ſame name; that there was not one harbour on its weſtern coaſt; and that Yamſk was the only one, except Okotſk, on all the weſtern ſide of the Penſhinſkian ſea, till we come to the river Amur. The Kurile Iſlands contain but one harbour, and that is on the north-eaſt ſide of Mareekan; where, as we have already mentioned, the Ruſſians have a ſettlement.

The other chart comprehended all the diſcoveries that the Ruſſians had made to the eaſtward of Kamtſchatka, towards America. That part of the American coaſt, with which Tſcherikoff fell in, is laid down in this chart between the latitude of 58° and 58½° north, and 75° of eaſtern longitude, from Okotſk, or 218½° from Greenwich; and the place where Beering anchored

chored in 59½° of latitude, and 63½° of longitude from Okotſk, or 207° from Greenwich. To ſay nothing of the longitude, which may, from ſeveral cauſes, be erroneous, the latitude of the coaſt, diſcovered by Beering and Tſcherikoff, particularly that part of it which was diſcovered by the latter, differs conſiderably from Mr. Muller's chart. Whether the chart now produced by Iſmyloff, or that of Muller, be moſt erroneous in this reſpect, it may be difficult to determine.

According to Iſmyloff's account, neither the number nor the ſituation of the iſlands which are diſperſed between 52° and 55° of latitude, in the ſpace between Kamtſchatka and America, is properly aſcertained. He ſtruck out about a third of them, aſſuring us, that they did not exiſt; and he conſiderably altered the ſituation of others; which, he ſaid, was neceſſary, from the obſervations which he himſelf had made; and there was no reaſon to entertain a doubt about this. As theſe iſlands are nearly under the ſame parallel, different navigators, miſled by their different reckonings, might eaſily miſtake one iſland, or cluſter of iſlands, for another; and imagine they had made a new diſcovery, when they had only found old ones, in a poſition ſomewhat different from that which their former viſitors had aſſigned to them.

The iſles of St. Theodore, St. Stephen, St. Abraham, St. Macarius, Seduction Iſland, and

ſeveral others, which are repreſented in Mr. Muller's chart, were not to be found in this now produced to us; nay, Iſmyloff and the other Ruſſians aſſured Captain Cook, that they had been frequently ſought for without effect. Nevertheleſs, it is difficult to believe, that Mr. Muller could place them in his chart without ſome authority. Captain Cook, however, confiding in the teſtimony of theſe people, whom he thought competent witneſſes, omitted them in his chart; and made ſuch corrections reſpecting the other iſlands, as he had reaſon to think were neceſſary.

We ſhall now proceed to give ſome account of the iſlands, begining with thoſe which are neareſt to Kamtſchatka, and computing the longitude from the harbour of Petropaulowſka, in the bay of Awatſka. The firſt is Beering's Iſland, in 55° of northern latitude, and 6° of eaſtern longitude. At the diſtance of ten leagues from the ſouthern extremity of this, in the direction of eaſt by ſouth, or eaſt-ſouth-eaſt, ſtands *Maidenoi Oſtroff*, or the Copper Iſland. The next iſland is Atakou, in the latitude of 52° 45′ and in the longitude of 15° or 16°. The extent of this iſland is about eighteen leagues in the direction of eaſt and weſt; and it is perhaps the ſame land which Beering fell in with, and to which he gave the name of Mount St. John.

We next come to a cluſter of ſix or more iſlands; two of which, Amluk and Atghka, are

of

of conſiderable extent, and each of them has a good harbour. The middle of this group lies in the latitude of 52° 30′, and 28° of longitude, from the bay of Awatſka; and its extent is about four degrees, in the direction of eaſt and weſt. Theſe are the iſles that Iſmyloff ſaid were to be removed four degrees to the eaſtward. In the ſituation they have in Captain Cook's chart, was a group, comprehending ten little iſlands, which, we were informed, were entirely to be ſtruck out; and alſo two iſlands, ſituate between them and the group to which Oonalaſhka appertains. In the place of theſe two, an iſland, named Amoghta, was introduced.

The ſituation of many of theſe iſlands may, perhaps, be erroneouſly laid down. But the poſition of the largeſt group, of which Oonalaſhka is one of the moſt conſiderable iſlands, is free from ſuch errors. Moſt of the iſlands that compoſe this cluſter, were ſeen by us; their longitude and latitude were therefore determined with tolerable accuracy, particularly the harbour of Samganoodha, in Oonalaſhka, which muſt be conſidered as a fixed point. This group may be ſaid to extend as far as Halibut Iſles, which are forty leagues diſtant from Oonalaſhka, towards the eaſt-north-eaſt. Within theſe iſles, a paſſage, communicating with Briſtol Bay, was marked in Iſmyloff's chart; which converts about fifteen leagues of the coaſt, that Captain Cook had ſuppoſed to be part

of the continent, into an iſland, named Ooneemak. This paſſage might eaſily eſcape us, being, as we were informed, extremely narrow, ſhallow, and only to be navigated through with boats, or veſſels of very ſmall burthen.

From the chart, as well as from the teſtimony of Iſmyloff and his countrymen, it appears, that this is as far as the Ruſſians have made any diſcoveries, or have extended themſelves, ſince the time of Beering. They all affirmed, that no perſons of that nation had ſettled themſelves ſo far to the eaſtward, as the place where the natives gave the note to Captain Clerke; which being delivered to Iſmyloff for his peruſal, he ſaid, that it had been written at Oomanak. From him we procured the name of Kodiak *, the largeſt of Schumagin's Iſlands; for it had no name aſſigned to it upon the chart which he produced. It may not be improper to mention, that no names were put to the iſlands which Iſmyloff ſaid were to be ſtruck out of the chart; and Captain Cook conſidered this as ſome confirmation, that they have no exiſtence.

The American continent is here called, by the Ruſſians, as well as by the iſlanders, Alaſchka; which appellation, though it properly belongs only to that part which is contiguous to Ooneemak,

* A Ruſſian ſhip had touched at Kodiak in the year 1776.

mak, is made uſe of by them when ſpeaking of the American continent in general.

This is all the intelligence we obtained from theſe people, reſpecting the geography of this part of the globe; and perhaps this was all the information they were able to give. For they repeatedly aſſured Captain Cook, that they knew of no other iſlands, beſides thoſe which were repreſented upon this chart, and that no Ruſſian had ever viſited any part of the American continent to the northward, except that which is oppoſite the country of the Tſchutſkis.

If Mr. Stæhlin was not greatly impoſed upon, what could induce him to publiſh a map ſo ſingularly erroneous, as his map of the New Northern Archipelago, in which many of theſe iſlands are jumbled together without the leaſt regard to truth? Nevertheleſs, he himſelf ſtyles it "a very "accurate little map."

Iſmyloff continued with us till the evening of the 21ſt, when he took his final leave. Captain Cook entruſted to his care a letter to the Lords of the Admiralty, encloſing a chart of all the northern coaſts we had viſited. Iſmyloff ſaid there would be an opportunity of tranſmitting it to Kamtſchatka, or Okotſk, in the courſe of the ſucceeding ſpring; and that it would be at Peterſburg the following winter. He gave the Captain a letter to Major Behm, Governor of Kamtſchatka, who reſides at Bolcheretſk in that

peninſula; and another to the commanding officer at Petropaulowſka.

Mr. Iſmyloff ſeemed to poſſeſs abilities that might entitle him to a higher ſtation than that in which we found him. He had conſiderable knowledge in aſtronomy, and in the moſt uſeful branches of the mathematics. Captain Cook made him a preſent of an Hadley's octant; and though, perhaps, it was the firſt he had ever ſeen, he very quickly made himſelf acquainted with moſt of the uſes to which that inſtrument can be applied.

On Thurſday the 22d, in the morning, we made an attempt to get out to ſea, with the wind at ſouth-eaſt, but did not ſucceed. In the afternoon of the 23d we were viſited by one Jacob Ivanovitch Sopoſnicoff, a Ruſſian, who commanded a ſmall veſſel at Oomanak. This man ſeemed very modeſt, and would drink no ſtrong liquor, of which the other Ruſſians, whom we had met with here, were extremely fond. He appeared to know what ſupplies could be obtained at the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, and the price of the various articles, more accurately than Mr. Iſmyloff. But, by all accounts, every thing, we ſhould have occaſion to purchaſe at that place, was very ſcarce, and bore a high price. This man informed us, that he was to be at Petropaulowſka in the enſuing May; and, as we underſtood, was to have the charge of Captain

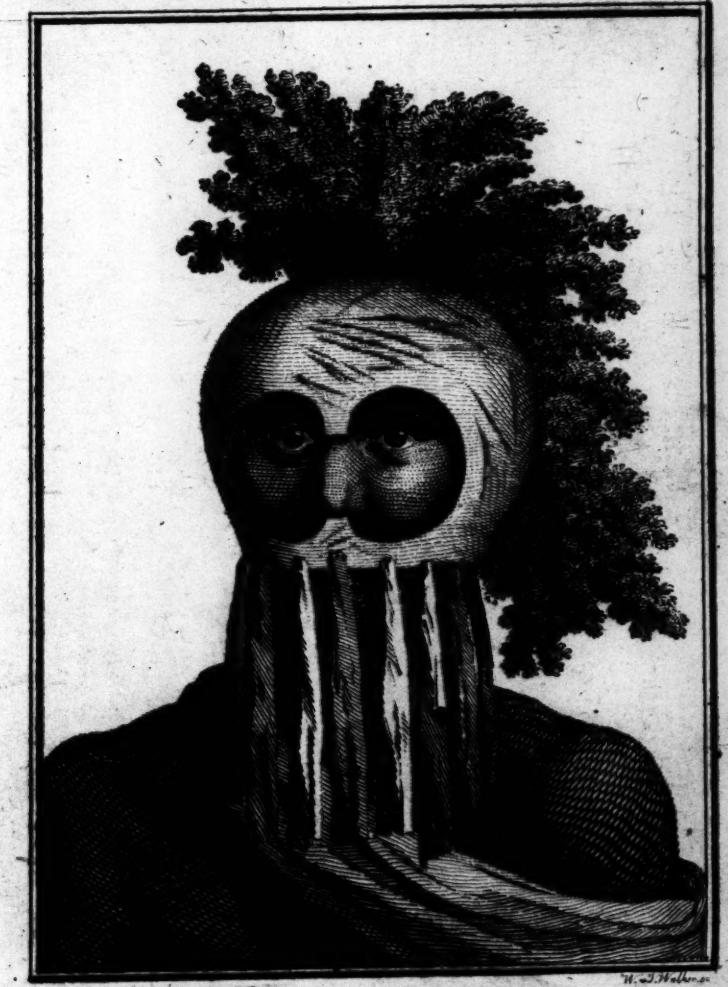
Cook's

BRITISH
6 AU 75
MUSEUM

BRITISH
6 AU 75
MUSEUM



A MAN of the SANDWICH ISLANDS DANCING.



A MAN of the SANDWICH ISLANDS in a MASK.

Cook's letter. He ſeemed very deſirous of having ſome token from the Captain to carry to Major Behm; and, to gratify him, the Captain ſent a ſmall ſpying-glaſs.

After we had contracted an acquaintance with theſe Ruſſians, ſeveral of our gentlemen, at different times, viſited their ſettlement on the iſland, where they always met with friendly treatment. It conſiſted of a dwelling-houſe and two ſtore-houſes. Beſides the Ruſſians, there was a number of the Kamtſchadales, and of the Oonalaſhkans, as ſervants to the former. Some other natives of this iſland, who appeared to be independent of the Ruſſians, lived at the ſame place. Such of them as belonged to the Ruſſians, were all of the male ſex; and they are either taken, or purchaſed from their parents when young. There were, at preſent, about twenty of theſe who could be conſidered in no other light than as children. They all reſide in the ſame houſe, the Ruſſians at the upper end, the Kamtſchadales in the middle, and the Oonalaſhkans at the lower end, where is fixed a capacious boiler for preparing their food, which principally conſiſts of fiſh, with the addition of wild roots and berries. There is no great difference between the firſt and laſt table, except what is produced by cookery, by which the Ruſſians can make indifferent things palatable. They dreſs whales fleſh in ſuch a manner as to make it very good eating; and they have a kind of pan-



A MAN of the SANDWICH ISLANDS DANCING.

A MAN of the SANDWICH ISLANDS in a MASK.

pudding of ſalmon-roe, beaten up fine and fried, which is a tolerable ſubſtitute for bread. They may perhaps, occaſionally, taſte real bread, or have a diſh in which flour is one of the ingredients. If we except the juice of berries, which they generally ſip at their meals, they drink no other liquor than pure water; and it ſeems to be very fortunate for them that they have nothing ſtronger.

As the iſland furniſhes them with ſubſiſtence, ſo it does, in ſome meaſure, with clothing. This is chiefly compoſed of ſkins. The upper garment, which is made like a waggoner's frock, reaches down to the knees. Beſides this, they wear a waiſtcoat or two, a pair of breeches, a fur cap, and a pair of boots, the legs of which are formed of ſome kind of ſtrong gut, but the ſoles and upper leathers are of Ruſſian leather. Their two Chiefs, Iſmyloff and Ivanovitch, wore a calico frock; and they, as well as ſeveral others, had ſhirts of ſilk.

Many Ruſſians are ſettled upon all the moſt conſiderable iſlands between Kamtſchatka and Oonalaſhka, for the purpoſe of collecting furs. Their principal object is the ſea-beaver or otter; but ſkins of inferior value alſo make a part of their cargoes. We neglected to inquire how long they have had a ſettlement upon Oonalaſhka, and the neighbouring iſlands; but if we form our judgment on this point from the great ſubjection

the natives are under, this cannot be of a very late date *. Theſe furriers are, from time to time, ſucceeded by others. Thoſe we ſaw arrived here from Okotſk in 1776, and were to return in 1781.

As for the native inhabitants of this iſland, they are, to all appearance, a very peaceable, inoffenſive race of people; and, in point of honeſty, they might ſerve as a pattern to the moſt civilized nations. But, from what we ſaw of their neighbours, with whom the Ruſſians are unconnected, we have ſome doubt whether this was their original diſpoſition; and are rather inclined to be of opinion, that it is the conſequence of their preſent ſtate of ſubjection. Indeed, if we did not miſunderſtand the Ruſſians, they had been under the neceſſity of making ſome ſevere examples before they could bring the iſlanders into tolerable order. If ſeverities were really inflicted at firſt, the beſt excuſe for them is, that they have produced the moſt beneficial effects; and, at preſent, the greateſt harmony ſubſiſts between the Ruſſians and the natives. The latter have their own chiefs in each iſland, and ſeem to enjoy liberty and property without moleſtation. Whether they are tributaries to the Ruſſians, or not, we could never

* According to Mr. Coxe, in his account of the diſcoveries of the Ruſſians, they began to frequent Oonalaſhka in the year 1762.

learn;

learn; but we had ſome reaſon to ſuppoſe that they are.

The people of Oonalaſhka are in general rather low of ſtature, but plump, and well ſhaped. Their necks are commonly ſhort, and they have ſwarthy chubby faces. They have black eyes, and ſmall beards. Their hair is long, black, and ſtraight: the men wear it looſe behind, and cut before; but the women generally tie it up in a bunch.

The dreſs of both ſexes is the ſame with reſpect to faſhion, the only difference is in the materials. The frock worn by the women is made of the ſkins of ſeals; and that of the men, of the ſkins of birds; both reach below the knees. This conſtitutes the whole dreſs of the females. But, over the frock, the men wear another compoſed of gut, which water cannot penetrate; it has a hood to it, which is drawn over the head. Some of them wear boots; and all of them wear a ſort of oval ſnouted cap, made of wood, with a rim that admits the head. They dye theſe caps with green and other colours; and round the upper part of the rim they fix the long briſtles of ſome ſea animal, on which glaſs beads are ſtrung; and on the front is a ſmall image or two formed of bone. They do not make uſe of paint; but the women puncture their faces ſlightly, and both ſexes perforate the lower lip, in which they fix pieces of bone. But it is as uncommon here to

ſee

ſee a man with this ornament, as to obſerve a woman without it. Some fix beads to the upper lip under the noſtrils; and they all ſuſpend ornaments in their ears.

Fiſh and other ſea animals, birds, roots, berries, and even ſea-weed, compoſe their food. They dry quantities of fiſh during the ſummer, which they lay up in ſmall huts for their uſe in winter; and, probably, they preſerve berries and roots for the ſame ſeaſon of ſcarcity. They eat moſt of their proviſions raw. Boiling and broiling were the only methods of cookery that we ſaw practiſed among them; and the former they in all probability learnt from the Ruſſians. Some have in their poſſeſſion ſmall braſs kettles; and thoſe who have not, make one of a flat ſtone, with ſides of clay.

Captain Cook once happened to be preſent, when the chief of this iſland made his dinner of the raw head of a large halibut, juſt caught. Before any part of it was given to the chief, two of his ſervants eat the gills, with no other dreſſing than ſqueezing out the ſlime. After this, one of them having cut off the head of the fiſh, took it to the ſea, and waſhed it, then came with it, and ſeated himſelf by the chief; but not before he had pulled up ſome graſs, upon a part of which the head was placed, and the reſt was ſtrewed before the chief. He then cut large pieces off the cheeks, and put them within the reach of the

chief, who ſwallowed them with great ſatisfaction. When he had finiſhed his meal, the remains of the head being cut in pieces, were given to the ſervants, who tore off the meat with their teeth, and gnawed the bones like ſo many dogs.

As the Oonalaſhkans uſe no paint, they are leſs dirty in their perſons than thoſe ſavages who thus beſmear themſelves; but they are full as filthy in their houſes. The following is their method of building: they dig, in the ground, an oblong pit, which rarely exceeds fifty feet in length, and twenty in breadth; but the dimenſions are in general ſmaller. Over this excavation they form the roof of wood, which they cover firſt with graſs, and then with earth, ſo that the external appearance reſembles a dung-hill. Near each end of the roof is left a ſquare opening, which admits the light; one of theſe openings being intended only for this purpoſe, and the other being alſo uſed to go in and out by, with the aſſiſtance of a ladder; or rather a poſt, in which ſteps are cut. In ſome of the houſes there is another entrance below, but this is rather uncommon. Round the ſides and ends of the habitations, the families, ſeveral of which dwell together, have their ſeparate apartments, where they ſleep, and ſit at work; not on benches, but in a ſort of concave trench, dug entirely round the inſide of the houſe, and covered with mats, ſo that this part is kept pretty clean and decent. The ſame cannot be

be ſaid of the middle of the houſe, which is common to all the families. For, though it is covered with dry graſs, it is a receptacle for every kind of dirt, and the place where the urine trough ſtands; the ſtench of which is by no means improved by raw hides, or leather, being almoſt continually ſteeped in it. Behind, and over the trench, they place the few effects that they have in their poſſeſſion, ſuch as their mats, ſkins, and apparel.

Their furniture conſiſts of buckets, cans, wooden bowls, ſpoons, matted baſkets, and ſometimes a Ruſſian kettle or pot. All theſe utenſils are made in a very neat manner; and yet we obſerved no other tools among them than the knife and the hatchet; that is, a ſmall flat piece of iron, made like an adze, by fixing it into a crooked wooden handle.

Though the Ruſſians live among theſe people, we found much leſs iron in poſſeſſion of the latter, than we had met with among other tribes on the neighbouring continent of America, who had never ſeen the Ruſſians, nor perhaps had any intercourſe with them. Probably a few beads, and a ſmall quantity of tobacco and ſnuff, purchaſe all they have to ſpare. There are few of them that do not both ſmoke and chew tobacco, and take ſnuff.

They did not appear to be very deſirous of more iron, or to want any other inſtruments, except

eept ſewing needles, their own being formed of bone. With theſe they ſew their canoes, and make their clothes, and alſo work very curious embroidery. They uſe, inſtead of thread, the fibres of ſinews, which they ſplit to the thickneſs which is required. All ſewing is performed by the females. They are the ſhoe-makers, taylors, and boat-builders, or boat-coverers; for the men, in all probability, conſtruct the wooden frame, over which the ſkins are ſewed. They manufacture mats, and baſkets of graſs, which are both ſtrong and beautiful. There is, indeed, a neatneſs and perfection in moſt of their work, that ſhews they are neither deficient in ingenuity nor perſeverance.

We did not obſerve a fire-place in any one of their habitations. They are lighted, as well as heated, by lamps; which, though ſimple, effectually anſwer the purpoſe for which they are intended. They conſiſt of a flat ſtone, hollowed on one ſide like a plate; in the hollow part they put the oil, mixed with ſome dry graſs, which ſerves for a wick. Both ſexes often warm themſelves over one of theſe lamps, by placing it between their legs, under their garments, and ſitting thus over it for ſeveral minutes. Theſe people produce fire both by colliſion and attrition; the firſt by ſtriking two ſtones againſt each other, on one of which a quantity of brimſtone has been previouſly rubbed. The latter method

is

is performed by means of two pieces of wood, one of which is flat, and the other is a ſtick of the length of about a foot and a half. They preſs the pointed end of the ſtick upon the other piece, whirling it nimbly round as a drill, and thus fire is procured in a few minutes. This method is common in many countries. It is not only practiſed by theſe people, but alſo by the Kamtſchadales, the Greenlanders, the Otaheiteans, the New Hollanders, and the Brazilians, and probably by other nations. Some men of learning and genius have founded an argument on this cuſtom, to prove that this and that nation are of the ſame extraction. But caſual agreements, in a few particular inſtances, will not wholly authorize ſuch a concluſion; nor, on the other hand, will a diſagreement, either in manners or cuſtoms, between two different nations, prove of courſe that they are of different extraction.

We ſaw no offenſive, nor even defenſive weapon among the natives of Oonalaſhſka. It can ſcarcely be ſuppoſed that the Ruſſians found them in ſuch a defenceleſs ſtate; it is rather to be imagined, that, for their own ſecurity, they have diſarmed them. Political motives, likewiſe, may have induced the Ruſſians not to permit theſe iſlanders to have any large canoes; for we can hardly believe they had none ſuch originally, as we found them among all their neighbours.

However,

However, we obſerved none here except two or three that belonged to the Ruſſians.

The canoes in uſe among the natives, are ſmaller than any of thoſe we had ſeen upon the coaſt of America, from which, however, they differ but little in their conſtruction. The form of theſe terminates ſomewhat abruptly; the head is forked, and the upper point of the fork projects without the under one, which is level with the ſurface of the water. It is remarkable that they ſhould thus conſtruct them, for the fork generally catches hold of every thing that comes in the way; to prevent which, they fix a piece of ſmall ſtick from one point to the other. In other reſpects they build their canoes after the manner of thoſe of the Eſquimaux and Greenlanders; the frame being of ſlender laths, and the covering of the ſkins of ſeals. They are about twelve feet in length, eighteen inches in breadth in the middle, and twelve or fourteen inches in depth. They ſometimes carry two perſons, one of whom ſits in the ſeat, or round hole, which is nearly in the middle; and the other is ſtretched at full length in the canoe. Round this hole is a rim or hoop of wood, about which gut-ſkin is ſewed, which can be drawn together, or opened like a purſe, with leathern ſtrings fitted to the outer edge. The man ſits in this place, draws the ſkin tight about his body over his gut-frock, and brings the ends of the thongs, or purſe-ſtrings, over his ſhoulder.

ſhoulder. The ſleeves of his frock are faſtened tight round his wriſts; and it being cloſe round his neck, and the hood being drawn over his head, where his cap confines it, water cannot eaſily penetrate, either into the canoe, or to his body. If, however, any water ſhould find means to inſinuate itſelf, the boatman dries it up with a piece of ſpunge. He makes uſe of a double-bladed paddle, which is held with both hands in the middle, ſtriking the water firſt on one ſide, and then on the other, with a quick regular motion. Thus the canoe is impelled at a great rate, and in a direction perfectly ſtraight. In ſailing from Egoochſhak to Samganoodha, though our ſhip went at the rate of ſeven miles an hour, two or three canoes kept pace with her.

Their implements for hunting and fiſhing lie ready upon their canoes, under ſtraps fixed for the purpoſe. They are all extremely well made of wood and bone, and are not very different from thoſe uſed by the Greenlanders. The only difference is in the point of the miſſile dart; which, in ſome that we ſaw at this iſland, does not exceed an inch in length; whereas thoſe of the Greenlanders, according to Crantz, are about eighteen inches long. Indeed theſe darts, as well as ſome others of their inſtruments, are extremely curious. Their darts are generally made of fir, and are about four feet in length. One end is formed of bone, into which, by means of

a ſocket, another ſmall piece of bone, which is barbed, is fixed, but contrived in ſuch a manner, as to be put in and taken out without trouble: this is ſecured to the middle of the ſtick by a ſtrong, though thin piece of twine, compoſed of ſinews. The bird, fiſh, or other animal is no ſooner ſtruck, than the pointed bone ſlips out of the ſocket, but remains fixed in its body by means of the barb. The dart then ſerves as a float to trace the animal, and alſo contributes to fatigue it conſiderably, ſo that it is eaſily taken. They throw theſe darts by the aſſiſtance of a thin piece of wood, twelve or fourteen inches long; the middle of this is ſlightly hollowed, for the better reception of the weapon; and at the termination of the hollow, which does not extend to the end, is fixed a ſhort pointed piece of bone, to prevent the dart from ſlipping. The other extremity is furniſhed with a hole for the reception of the fore-finger, and the ſides are made to coincide with the other fingers and thumb, in order to graſp with greater firmneſs. The natives throw theſe darts to the diſtance of eighty or ninety yards, with great force and dexterity. They are exceedingly expert in ſtriking fiſh, both in the ſea, and in rivers. They alſo uſe hooks and lines, nets and wears. The lines are formed of twiſted ſinews, and the hooks of bone.

Whales, porpoiſes, grampuſes, halibut, ſword-fiſh, ſalmon, trout, cod, ſoals, flat-fiſh, and ſeve-

ral

ral other ſorts, are found here; and there may be many more that we had not an opportunity of ſeeing. Salmon and halibut appear to be in the greateſt plenty; and on them the people of theſe iſles principally ſubſiſt; at leaſt, they were the only ſort of fiſh, except cod, that we obſerved to be laid up for their winter ſtore.

Seals, and all that tribe of ſea animals, are not ſo numerous as they are in many other ſeas. Nor can this be thought ſurprizing, ſince there is hardly any part of the coaſt, on either continent, nor any of theſe iſlands, ſituate between them, but what is inhabited, and whoſe inhabitants hunt theſe animals for their food and cloathing. Sea-horſes are, indeed, to be found in prodigious numbers about the ice; and the ſea-otter is ſcarce any where to be met with but in this ſea. An animal was ſometimes ſeen by us, that blew after the manner of whales. It had a head reſembling that of a ſeal. It was larger than that animal, and its colour was white, with dark ſpots interſperſed. This was perhaps the *manati*, or ſea-cow.

Water fowls are neither found here in ſuch numbers, nor in ſuch variety, as in the northern parts of the Atlantic Ocean. However there are ſome in theſe parts, that we do not recollect to have ſeen in other countries; particularly the *alca monochroa* of Steller, and a black and white duck, which we judge to be different from the

ſtone-duck that Kraſheninikoff has deſcribed in his Hiſtory of Kamtſchatka. All the other birds we ſaw are mentioned by this author, except ſome which we obſerved near the ice; and the greateſt part of theſe, if not all, have been deſcribed by Martin, in his voyage to Greenland. It is ſomewhat extraordinary, that penguins, which are ſo frequently met with in many parts of the world, ſhould not be found in this ſea. Albatroſſes too are extremely ſcarce here.

The few land-birds ſeen by us are the ſame with thoſe of Europe; but there were probably many others which we had no opportunity of obſerving. A very beautiful bird was ſhot in the woods at Norton Sound; which, we underſtand, is ſometimes found in England, and known by the appellation of chatterer. Our people ſaw other ſmall birds there, but in no great abundance or variety; ſuch as the bullfinch, the woodpecker, the yellow-finch, and tit-mouſe.

Our excurſions and obſervations being confined to the ſea-coaſt, we cannot be expected to have much knowledge of the animals or vegetables of the country. There are few other inſects beſides muſquitoes, and we ſaw few reptiles except lizards. There are no deer at Oonalaſhka, or any of the neighbouring iſlands; nor are there any domeſtic animals, not even dogs. Weaſels and foxes were the only quadrupeds we obſerved; but the natives told us, that they had likewiſe

likewiſe hares, and the *marmottas* mentioned by Kraſheninikoff. Hence it appears, that the inhabitants procure the greateſt ſhare of their food from the ſea and rivers. They are alſo indebted to the ſea for all the wood which they uſe for building, and other neceſſary purpoſes; as there is not a tree to be ſeen growing upon any of the iſlands, nor upon the neighbouring coaſt of the continent.

The ſeeds of plants are ſaid to be conveyed, by various means, from one part of the world to another; even to iſlands lying in the midſt of extenſive oceans, and far diſtant from any other lands. It is therefore remarkable, that there are no trees growing on this part of the American continent, nor upon any of the adjacent iſles. They are doubtleſs as well ſituated for receiving ſeeds, by the various ways we have heard of, as thoſe coaſts which have plenty of wood. Nature has, perhaps, denied to ſome ſoils the power of raiſing trees, without the aſſiſtance of art. With reſpect to the drift-wood, upon the ſhores of theſe iſlands, we have no doubt of its coming from America. For though there may be none on the neighbouring coaſt, a ſufficient quantity may grow farther up the country, which may be broken looſe by torrents in the ſpring, and brought down to the ſea; and not a little may be conveyed from the woody coaſts, though ſituated at a more conſiderable diſtance.

Plants are to be found in great variety at Oonalaſhka. Several of them are ſuch as we meet with in Europe, and alſo in Newfoundland, and other parts of America; and others of them, which are likewiſe found in Kamtſchatka, are eaten by the natives both there and here. Of theſe, Kraſheninikoff has favoured us with deſcriptions. The principal one is the *ſaranne*, or lily root; which is about as large as a root of garlick, round, and compoſed of a number of ſmall cloves and grains. When boiled, it ſomewhat reſembles ſaloop; the taſte of it is not diſagreeable. It does not appear to be in great abundance.

Among the food of the natives we may reckon ſome other wild roots; the ſtalk of a plant not unlike angelica; and berries of different ſpecies, ſuch as cranberries, hurtle-berries, bramble-berries, and heath-berries; beſides a ſmall red berry, which, in Newfoundland, is denominated partridge berry; and another brown berry, with which we were unacquainted. This has ſomewhat of the taſte of a ſloe, but is different from it in every other reſpect. When eaten in a conſiderable quantity it is very aſtringent. Brandy may be diſtilled from it. Captain Clerke endeavoured to preſerve ſome; but they fermented, and became as ſtrong as if they had been ſteeped in ſpirits.

There were ſeveral plants which were ſerviceable to us, but are not uſed either by the Ruſſians

or the natives. Theſe were pea-tops, wild purſlain, a ſort of ſcurvy-graſs, creſſes, and a few others. We found all theſe very palatable, whether dreſſed in ſoups or in ſallads. The vallies and low grounds abound with graſs, which grows very thick, and to a great length. We are of opinion, that cattle might ſubſiſt at Oonalaſhka in every ſeaſon of the year, without being houſed. The ſoil, in many places, appeared to be capable of producing grain and vegetables. But, at preſent, the Ruſſian traders, and the natives, ſeem contented with the ſpontaneous productions of nature.

We obſerved native ſulphur among the people of this iſland; but we could not learn where they procured it. We alſo found ochre, and a ſtone that affords a purple colour; beſides another that gives a good green. This laſt, in its natural ſtate, is of a greyiſh green hue, coarſe, and heavy. It readily diſſolves in oil; but when it is put into water, it altogether loſes its properties. As for the ſtones about the ſhore and hills, we perceived in them nothing that was extraordinary.

The Oonalaſhkans inter their dead on the tops of hills, and raiſe over the grave a little hillock. One of the natives, who attended Captain Cook in a walk into the country, pointed out ſeveral of theſe repoſitories of the dead. There was one of them, by the ſide of a road, that had a heap of ſtones over it; and all who paſſed it, added a ſtone

to the heap. In the country were ſeen ſeveral ſtone hillocks, that ſeemed to have been artificially raiſed. Some of them were, to appearance, of great antiquity.

We are unacquainted with the notions of theſe people reſpecting the deity, and a future ſtate. We are equally uninformed with regard to their diverſions; having ſeen nothing that could give us an inſight into either.

They are extremely chearful and friendly among each other; and they always treated us with great civility. The Ruſſians ſaid they never had any connection with their women, on account of their not being chriſtians. Our people, however, were leſs ſcrupulous; and ſome of them had reaſon to repent, that the women of Oonalaſhka encouraged their addreſſes; for their health was injured by a diſtemper that is not wholly unknown here. The natives are alſo ſubject to the cancer, or a complaint of a ſimilar nature, which thoſe who are attacked by it are ſtudious to conceal. They do not appear to be long-lived. We did not ſee a perſon, man or woman, whom we could ſuppoſe to be ſixty years of age; and we obſerved very few who ſeemed to exceed fifty.

We have occaſionally mentioned, from the time of our arrival in Prince William's Sound, how remarkably the inhabitants on this north-weſtern ſide of America reſemble the Eſquimaux and Greenlanders in various particulars of perſon,

ſon, dreſs, weapons, canoes, and the like. We were, however, much leſs ſtruck with this, than with the affinity ſubſiſting between the dialects of the Greenlanders and Eſquimaux, and thoſe of Oonalaſhka and Norton's Sound. But we muſt obſerve, with reſpect to the words which were collected by us on this ſide of America, that too much ſtreſs is not to be laid upon their being accurately repreſented; for, after the death of Mr. Anderſon, we had few who took any great degree of pains about ſuch matters; and we have often found that the ſame word, written down by two or more perſons, from the mouth of the ſame native, differed conſiderably, on being compared together. Nevertheleſs, enough is certain to authorize this judgment, that there is great reaſon to ſuppoſe, that all theſe nations are of the ſame extraction; and if that be the caſe, there is little doubt of there being a northern communication by ſea, between the weſtern ſide of America, and the eaſtern ſide, through Baffin's Bay; which communication, however, is perhaps effectually ſhut up againſt ſhips, by ice, and other obſtructions; ſuch, at leaſt, was Captain Cook's opinion at this time.

The tides in theſe parts are not very conſiderable, except in Cook's River. The flood comes from the ſouth or ſouth-eaſt, following the direction of the coaſt to the north-weſt. Between Cape Prince of Wales and Norton Sound we found

found a current ſetting towards the north-weſt, particularly off that Cape, and within Sledge Iſland. This current, however, extended but a little way from the coaſt, and was neither conſiſtent nor uniform. To the north of Cape Prince of Wales, we obſerved neither tide nor current, either on the coaſt of America, or that of Aſia. This circumſtance gave riſe to an opinion which ſome of our people entertained, that the two coaſts were connected either by land or ice; and that opinion received ſome degree of ſtrength, from our never having any hollow waves from the northward, and from our ſeeing ice almoſt the whole way acroſs.

From the obſervations made during our continuance in the harbour of Samganoodha, its latitude is 53° 5′ north, and its longitude 193° 29′ 45″ eaſt.

CHAP.

## CHAP. XII.

*Departure from Samganoodha—Amoghta—An elevated Rock—Repaſs the Strait between Oonalaſhka and Oonella—Proceed to the South—One Man killed, and three or four wounded on board the Diſcovery—Mowee diſcovered—Viſits from the Natives—A Viſit from a Chief named Terreeoboo—Owhyhee, an Iſland, diſcovered—Ships ply to Windward—An Eclipſe of the Moon—Ship's Crew refuſe to taſte Sugar-Cane Beer—Comparative View of the Cordage in the Navy and Merchants Service—Eulogium on the Natives of Owhyhee—The Reſolution accompliſhes the Intention of getting to Windward of the Iſland—The Progreſs—Viſits from the Iſlanders—Joined by the Diſcovery—Mr. Bligh examines Karakakooa Bay—Multitudes of People—Anchor in the Bay.*

ON Monday the 26th of October, we ſailed from Samganoodha harbour, when, the wind being ſoutherly, we ſtood to the weſtward. We intended to proceed to the Sandwich Iſlands, in order to paſs a few of the winter months there, if we ſhould meet with the neceſſary refreſhments, and then advance in our progreſs to Kamtſchatka, ſo as to arrive there about the middle of May in the enſuing year. This being determined on, the Commodore gave Captain Clerke inſtructions

for proceeding in caſe of ſeparation; Sandwich Iſlands being appointed for the firſt place of rendezvous; and, for the ſecond, Petropaulowſka, in Kamtſchatka.

Having got out of the harbour, the wind veered to the ſouth-eaſt, with which we were carried to the weſtern part of Oonalaſhka, by the evening. Here the wind was at ſouth, and we ſtretched to the weſtward till the next morning at ſeven, at which time we wore, and ſtood to the eaſt. The wind had now ſo greatly increaſed, as to reduce us to our three courſes. It blew in heavy ſqualls, accompanied with rain, hail, and ſnow.

In the morning of the 28th, at about nine o'clock, Oonalaſhka bore ſouth-eaſt, about four leagues diſtant. The ſtrength of the gale was much abated, and, towards the evening, inſenſibly veered round to the eaſt, and ſoon after got to north-eaſt, increaſing to a very hard gale, attended with rain.

At half after ſix, in the morning of the 29th, we diſcovered land, which we ſuppoſed to be the iſland Amoghta. At eight, the wind having veered to the weſtward, we could not weather the iſland, and gave over plying; bearing away for Oonalaſhka, in order to go to the north of it, not daring, in ſo hard a gale of wind, to attempt a paſſage to the ſouth-eaſt of it. When we bore away, the land was about four leagues diſtant. The longitude was 191° 17′, and the latitude 53°

38′. The Ruſſian map is very inaccurate in the ſituation of this iſland.

Steering to the north-eaſt, we diſcovered, at eleven o'clock, a rock, elevated like a tower, bearing north-north-eaſt, at the diſtance of about four leagues. The latitude was 53° 57′, and the longitude 191° 2′. We got ſight of Oonalaſhka about three in the afternoon, when we ſhortened ſail, and hauled the wind, being unable to get through the paſſage before night. On the 20th, at day-break, having a very hard gale at weſt-north-weſt, with heavy ſqualls and ſnow, we bore away under courſes, and cloſe-reefed top-ſails. About noon we were in the middle of the ſtrait, and got through it at three in the afternoon, Cape Providence bearing weſt-ſouth-weſt; the wind at weſt-north-weſt, blew a ſtrong gale, with fair weather.

On the 2d of November, the wind was at ſouth; and, in the evening, blew a violent ſtorm, which occaſioned us to bring to. Several guns were fired by the Diſcovery, which we immediately anſwered. We loſt ſight of her at eight, and ſaw her no more till eight the next morning. She joined us at ten; when, the height of the gale being over, and the wind having veered to weſt-north-weſt, we made ſail, and purſued our courſe to the ſouthward.

In the morning of Saturday the 7th, a ſhag, or cormorant, flew often round the ſhip. As it

is

is not common for theſe birds to go far out of the ſight of land, we ſuppoſed there was ſome at no great diſtance; though we could not diſcover any. Having but little wind in the afternoon, Captain Clerke came on board with ſome melancholy intelligence. He informed us that, the ſecond night after we departed from Samganoodha, the main tack of the Diſcovery gave way, by which accident one man was killed, and the boatſwain, with two or three others, wounded. He added, that his ſails and rigging received conſiderable damage on the 3d, and that he fired the guns as a ſignal to bring to.

On the 8th, we had a gentle breeze at north, with clear weather. On the 9th, we had eight hours calm. To this ſucceeded a wind from the ſouth, accompanied with fair weather. Such of our people as could handle a needle, were now employed to repair the ſails; and the carpenters were directed to put the boats in order.

At noon, on the 12th, the wind returned to the northward, and veered to the eaſt on the 15th. We now ſaw a tropic bird, and a dolphin; the firſt we had obſerved in our paſſage. On the 17th, the wind was ſouthward, where it remained till the 19th in the afternoon, when it was inſtantly brought round by the weſt to the north, by a ſquall of wind and rain. The wind increaſed to a very ſtrong gale, and brought us under double reefed top-ſails. In lowering the main top-

top-ſail, in order to reef it, the force of the wind tore it out of the foot-rope, and it was ſplit in ſeveral parts. We got, however, another top-ſail to the yard the next morning. We ſteered to the ſouthward till the 25th, at day-light, when we were in the latitude of 20° 55′.

The next morning, at day-break, land was diſcovered, extending from ſouth-ſouth-eaſt to weſt. We ſtood for it, and at eight o'clock, it extended from ſouth-eaſt to weſt, the neareſt part about two leagues diſtant. We now perceived that our diſcovery of the group of the Sandwich Iſlands had been very imperfect, thoſe which we had viſited in our progreſs northward, all lying to the leeward of our preſent ſtation.

An elevated hill appeared in the country, whoſe ſummit roſe above the clouds. The land, from this hill, fell in a gradual ſlope, terminating in a ſteep rocky coaſt; the ſea breaking againſt it in a moſt dreadful ſurf. Unable to weather the iſland, we bore up, and ranged to the weſtward. We now perceived people on many parts of the ſhore, and ſeveral houſes and plantations. The country appeared to be well ſupplied with wood and water, and ſtreams were ſeen, in various places, falling into the ſea.

It being of the utmoſt importance to procure a proper ſupply of proviſions at theſe iſlands, which could not poſſibly be accompliſhed, if a free trade with the natives were to be permitted; Captain

Cook

Cook publiſhed an order, prohibiting all perſons on board the ſhips from trading, except thoſe appointed by himſelf and Captain Clerke; and theſe were under limitations of trading only for proviſions and refreſhments. Injunctions were alſo laid againſt the admittance of women into the ſhips, but under certain reſtrictions. But the evil, which was intended to have been prevented by this regulation, had already got amongſt them.

About noon, the coaſt extended from ſouth-eaſt to north-weſt, the neareſt ſhore three miles diſtant, in the latitude of 20° 59′, and the longitude of 203° 50′. Some canoes came off, and, when they got along-ſide, many of the conductors of them came into the ſhip without heſitation. We perceived that they were of the ſame nation as thoſe iſlanders more to the leeward, which had already been viſited by us; and, as we underſtood, they were no ſtrangers to our having been there. It was, indeed, too evident; theſe people having got the venereal diſeaſe among them; which they probably contracted by an intercourſe with their neighbours, after we had left them.

Our viſiters ſupplied us with a quantity of cuttle-fiſh, in exchange for nails and iron. They brought but little fruit or roots, but ſaid they had plenty of them on their iſland, as well as of hogs and fowls. The horizon being clear, in the evening, we ſuppoſed the weſternmoſt land that we

we could ſee, to be an iſland, diſtinct from that off which we now were. Expecting the natives would return the next day, with the produce of their iſland, we plyed off the whole night, and ſtood cloſe in ſhore the next morning. At firſt we were viſited but by few, but, towards noon, many of them appeared, bringing with them potatoes, tarro, bread-fruit, plantains, and ſmall pigs, all of which were bartered for iron tools and nails, we having few other articles to give them. We traded with them till about four in the afternoon, at which time they had diſpoſed of all their cargoes; and, not expreſſing any inclination to fetch more, we immediately made ſail.

On the 30th, in the afternoon, being off the north-eaſt end of the iſland, ſome more canoes came off. Theſe principally belonged to Terreeoboo, a chief who came in one of them. He made the Commodore a preſent of two or three pigs; and we procured a little fruit by bartering with the other people. In about two hours they all left us, except ſeven or eight who choſe to remain on board. Soon after, a double failing canoe arrived to attend upon them, which we towed aſtern the whole night. In the evening, another iſland was ſeen to the windward, called, by the natives, *Owhyhee*. That, which we had been off for ſome days, was called *Mowee*.

At eight in the morning, on the 1ſt of December, Owhyhee extended from ſouth-eaſt to ſouth-weſt. Perceiving that we could fetch Owhyhee, we ſtood for it, when our viſiters from Mowee thought proper to embark in their canoes, and went aſhore. We ſpent the night, ſtanding off and on the north ſide of Owhyhee.

On the 2d of December, in the morning, to our great ſurprize, we ſaw the ſummits of the mountains covered with ſnow. Though they were not of an extraordinary height, the ſnow, in ſome places, appeared to be of a conſiderable depth, and to have remained there ſome time. Drawing near the ſhore, ſome of the natives approached us, who appeared a little ſhy at firſt, but we prevailed on ſome of them to come on board; and, at length, induced them to return to the iſland, to bring a ſupply of what we wanted. We had plenty of company after theſe had reached the ſhore, who brought us a tolerable ſupply of pigs, fruit, and roots. We traded with them till about ſix in the evening, when we ſtood off, in order to ply to windward round the iſland.

An eclipſe of the moon was obſerved in the evening of the 4th. Mr. King uſed, for the purpoſe of obſervation, a night-teleſcope, with a circular aperture at the object end. The Commodore obſerved with the teleſcope of one of Ramſden's ſextants.

In

In the evening of the 6th, being near the ſhore, and five leagues farther up the coaſt, we again traded with the natives; but, receiving only a trifling ſupply, we ſtood in the next morning, when the number of our viſiters was conſiderable, with whom we trafficked till two in the afternoon. We had now procured pork, fruit, and roots, ſufficient to ſupply us for four or five days. We therefore made ſail, and ſtill plyed to windward.

Captain Cook having procured a great quantity of ſugar cane, and having, upon a trial, diſcovered that a decoction of it made very palatable beer, he ordered ſome of it to be brewed for our general uſe; but, on the broaching of the caſks, not one of the crew would even taſte it. The Commodore, having no other motive in preparing this beverage, than that of preſerving our ſpirits for a colder climate, neither exerted his authority, nor had recourſe to perſuaſion, to induce them to drink it; well knowing that, ſo long as we could be plentifully ſupplied with other vegetables, there was no danger of the ſcurvy. But, that he might not be diſappointed in his views, he ordered that no grog ſhould be ſerved in either of the ſhips. The Commodore, and his officers, continued to drink this ſugar-cane beer, whenever materials could be procured for brewing it. Some hops, which we had on board, improved it much; and, it was, doubtleſs, extremely wholeſome; though the Captain's

inconſiderate crew, could not be perſuaded but that it was injurious to their health.

Innovations, of whatever kind, on board a ſhip, are ſure to meet with the diſapprobation of the ſeamen, though ever ſo much to their advantage. Portable ſoup, and ſour krout, were condemned, at firſt, as improper food for human beings. Few commanders have introduced more uſeful varieties of food and drink into their ſhips, than Captain Cook has done. Few others, indeed, have had the opportunities, or have been driven to the neceſſity of trying ſuch experiments. It was, nevertheleſs, owing to certain deviations from eſtabliſhed practice, that he was enabled, in a great degree, to preſerve his people from the ſcurvy, a diſtemper that has often made more havock in peaceful voyages, than the enemy in military expeditions.

Having kept at ſome diſtance from the coaſt, till the 13th, we ſtood in again, ſix leagues more to windward; and, after trading with the natives who came off to us, returned to ſea. We alſo intended to have approached the ſhore again on the 15th, to get a freſh ſupply of fruit and roots; but the wind happening to be then at ſouth-eaſt, we embraced the opportunity of ſtretching to the eaſtward, in order to get round the ſouth-eaſt end of the iſland. The wind continued at ſouth-eaſt the greateſt part of the 16th; on the 17th, it was variable; and on the 18th,

it

it was continually veering. Sometimes it blew in hard ſqualls; and, at other times, it was calm, with thunder, lightning, and rain. The wind was weſterly for a few hours in the afternoon; but it ſhifted, in the evening, to eaſt by ſouth. The ſouth-eaſt point of the iſland now bore ſouth-weſt by ſouth, diſtant about five leagues, and we expected that we ſhould be able to weather it; but it became calm at one the next morning, and we were left wholly at the mercy of a north eaſterly ſwell, which greatly impelled us towards the land; inſomuch, that, before morning, lights were ſeen upon the ſhore, which was then at the diſtance of about a league. It was a dark night, with thunder, lightning, and rain.

A breeze from the ſouth-eaſt ſucceeded the calm at about three, blowing in ſqualls, with rain. At day-break, the coaſt extended from north by weſt, to ſouth-weſt by weſt, about half a league diſtant; a moſt dreadful ſurf breaking upon the ſhore. We had certainly been in the moſt imminent danger; from which we were not yet ſecure, the wind veering more eaſterly; ſo that, for a conſiderable time, we were but juſt able to keep our diſtance from the coaſt. Our ſituation was rendered the more alarming, by the leach-rope of the main-top-ſail giving way, in conſequence of which the ſail was rent in two; the top-gallant-ſails giving way in the ſame manner. We ſoon, however, got others to the yards,

and left the land aſtern. The Diſcovery was at ſome diſtance to the north, intirely clear from the land; nor did ſhe appear in ſight till eight o'clock.

It is an obvious remark, that the bolt-ropes to our ſails are extremely deficient in ſtrength or ſubſtance. This has frequently been the ſource of infinite labour and vexation; and occaſioned the loſs of much canvas by their giving way. It was, upon this occaſion, obſerved by Captain Cook, that the cordage, canvas, and other ſtores, made uſe of in the navy, are inferior, in general, to thoſe uſed in the merchant ſervice.

The Commodore alſo obſerved, that an opinion prevailed among all naval officers, that the king's ſtores were ſuperior to any others; no ſhips being ſo well fitted out as thoſe of the navy. They may be right, he admits, as to the quantity; but, he apprehends, not with reſpect to the quality of the ſtores. This, indeed, is not often tried; for theſe things are uſually condemned, or converted to other uſes, before they are half worn out. Only ſuch voyages as ours afford an opportunity of making the trial; our ſituation being ſuch, as to render it neceſſary to wear every thing to the extreme *.

* Captain Cook, in this particular, appears to be miſtaken; the beſt of cordage being made in the king's yard. In time of war, indeed, when the cordage is, from neceſſity, ſupplied by contract, ſome of an inferior quality may ſometimes be made.

When

When day-light appeared, the natives aſhore exhibited a white flag, as a ſignal, we imagined, of peace and friendſhip. Many of them ventured out after us; but, as the wind freſhened, and we were unwilling to wait, they were preſently left aſtern. In the afternoon, we made another attempt to weather the eaſtern extreme, in which we failed; when the Commodore gave it up, and ran down to the Diſcovery.

Our getting round the iſland was, indeed, a matter of no importance; for we had ſeen the extent of it to the ſouth-eaſt, which was all the Commodore aimed at; the natives having informed us, that there was no other iſland to the windward of this. But, as we were ſo near accompliſhing our deſign, we did not entirely abandon the idea of weathering it, and continued to ply.

At noon, on the 20th, the ſouth-eaſt point bore ſouth, at the diſtance of three leagues. The ſnowy hills bore weſt-north-weſt; and we were within four miles of the neareſt ſhore. We were viſited, in the afternoon, by ſome of the natives, who came off in their canoes, bringing with them pigs and plantains. The latter were highly acceptable, we having been without vegetables for ſome days; but this was ſo inconſiderable a ſupply, (hardly ſufficient for one day) that we ſtood in the next morning, till within about four miles of the land, when a number of canoes came off,

laden with proviſions. The people in them continued trading with us till four o'clock in the afternoon; at which time we had got a good ſupply; we therefore made ſail, ſtretching off to the northward.

We met with leſs reſerve and ſuſpicion, in our intercourſe with the people of this iſland, than we had ever experienced among any tribe of ſavages. They frequently ſent up into the ſhip, the articles they meant to barter, and afterwards came in themſelves, to traffic on the quarter deck. The inhabitants of Otaheite, whom we have ſo often viſited, have not that confidence in our integrity. Whence it may be inferred, that thoſe of Owhyhee are more faithful in their dealings with each other, than the Otaheiteans.

It is but juſtice to obſerve, that they never attempted to over-reach us in exchanges, nor to commit a ſingle theft. They perfectly underſtand trading, and clearly comprehended the reaſon of our plying upon the coaſt. For, though they brought off plenty of pigs, and other proviſions, they were particular in keeping up their price; and, rather than diſpoſe of them at an undervalue, would carry them to ſhore again.

At eight in the morning of the 22d, we tacked to the ſouthward. At noon, the ſnowy peak bore ſouth-weſt. We ſtood to the ſouth-eaſt till midnight, when we tacked to the north till four. We had hopes of weathering the iſland, and ſhould

ſhould have ſucceeded, if a calm had not enſued, and left us to the mercy of a ſwell, which impelled us towards the land, from which we were not above the diſtance of two leagues. Some light puffs of wind, however, took us out of danger. Whilſt we lay in this ſituation, ſome iſlanders came off with hogs, fowls, and fruit. From one of the canoes we got a gooſe, which was not larger than a Muſcovy duck. The colour of its plumage was dark grey, and the bill and legs were black.

After purchaſing what the natives had brought off, we made ſail, and ſtretched to the north. At midnight, we tacked and ſtood to the ſouth-eaſt. Imagining the Diſcovery would ſee us tack, we omitted the ſignal; but it afterwards appeared that ſhe did not ſee us, and continued ſtanding to the north; for, the next morning, at day-light, ſhe was not to be ſeen. But, as the weather was now hazy, we could not ſee far; it was therefore poſſible that the Diſcovery might be following us. At noon, we were in the latitude of 19° 55′, and in the longitude of 205° 3′; and we were two leagues from the neareſt part of the iſland. In the evening, at ſix, the ſouthernmoſt part of the iſland bore ſouth-weſt, the neareſt ſhore about ſeven miles diſtant. We had, therefore, now ſucceeded in our endeavours, in getting to the windward of the iſland.

The

The Diſcovery was not yet within ſight, but as the wind was favourable for her to follow us, we expected ſhe would ſhortly join us. We kept cruiſing off this point of the iſland, till Captain Clerke was no longer expected here. It was, at length, conjectured, that he was gone to leeward, in order to meet us that way, not having been able to weather the north-eaſt part of the iſland.

Keeping generally from five to ten leagues from the land, only one canoe came off to us till the 28th; at which time we were attended by about a dozen, bringing, as uſual, the produce of the iſland. We were concerned that the people had been at the trouble of coming, as we could not poſſibly trade with them, not having yet conſumed our former ſtock; and experience had convinced us, that the hogs could not be kept alive, nor the roots be many days preſerved from putrefaction. We meant, however, not to leave this part of the iſland till we had got a ſupply, as we could not eaſily return to it, if it ſhould hereafter be found neceſſary. On the 30th, we began to be in want, but a calm prevented us from approaching the ſhore. A breeze, however, ſprung up at midnight, which enabled us to ſtand in for the land at day-break. At ten o'clock the iſlanders viſited us, bringing with them a quantity of fruit and roots, but only three ſmall pigs. This ſcanty ſupply was, perhaps, occaſioned by

our

our not having purchaſed thoſe which had lately been brought off.

For the purpoſes of traffic we brought to, but we were ſhortly interrupted with an exceſſive rain; and, indeed, we were too far from the ſhore; nor could we venture to go nearer, as we could not, for a moment, depend upon the wind's continuing where it was. The ſwell, too, was extremely high, and ſet obliquely upon the ſhore, where it broke in a moſt frightful ſurf. We had fine weather in the evening, and paſſed the night in making boards. Before day-break, on the 1ſt of January, 1779, the atmoſphere was laden with heavy clouds; and the new year was uſhered in with a heavy rain. We had a light breeze ſoutherly, with ſome calms. At ten, the rain ceaſed, the ſky became clear, and the wind freſhened.

Being now about four or five miles from the ſhore, ſome canoes arrived with hogs, fruit, and roots. We traded with the people in the canoes, till three in the afternoon; when, being pretty well ſupplied, we made ſail, in order to proceed to the lee ſide of the iſland, in ſearch of the Diſcovery. We ſtretched to the eaſtward, till midnight, when the wind favoured us, and we went upon the other tack.

The 2d, 3d, and 4th, were paſſed in running down the ſouth-eaſt ſide of the iſland, ſtanding off and on during the nights, and employing part

of

of each day in lying to, to give the natives an opportunity of trading with us. They frequently came off to us, at the diſtance of five leagues from the ſhore, but never brought much with them, at thoſe times, either from a fear of loſing their articles in the ſea, or from the uncertainty of a market. We procured a quantity of ſalt, of a moſt excellent quality.

In the morning of the 5th, we paſſed the ſouth point of the iſland, in the latitude of 18° 54′, beyond which the coaſt trends north 60° weſt. A large village is ſituated on this point, many of whoſe inhabitants thronged off to the ſhip with hogs and women. The latter could not poſſibly be prevented from coming on board; and they were leſs reſerved than any women we had ever ſeen. They ſeemed, indeed, to have viſited us with no other view than to tender us their perſons.

Having now got a quantity of ſalt, we purchaſed only ſuch hogs as were large enough for ſalting; refuſing all thoſe that were under ſize. But we could ſeldom procure any that exceeded the weight of ſixty pounds. Happily for us, we had ſtill ſome vegetables remaining, as we were now ſupplied with but few of thoſe productions. Indeed, from the appearance of this part of the country, it ſeemed incapable of affording them. Evident marks preſented themſelves of its having been laid waſte by the exploſion of a volcano;

and

and though we had not then ſeen any thing of the kind, the devaſtation it had made in the neighbourhood was but too viſible.

Though the coaſt is ſheltered from the reigning winds, it had no anchorage; a line of an hundred and ſixty fathoms not reaching the bottom, within half a mile of the ſhore. The natives having now left us, we ran a few miles down the coaſt in the evening, and paſſed the night in ſtanding off and on.

We were again viſited by the natives the next morning. They came laden with the ſame articles of commerce as before. Being not far from the ſhore, Captain Cook ſent Mr. Bligh, in a boat, in order to ſound the coaſt, and alſo to go aſhore in ſearch of freſh water. He reported, on his return, that, within two cables lengths of the ſhore, he found no ſoundings with a line of one hundred and ſixty fathoms; that, on the land, he could diſcover no ſtream or ſpring; that there was ſome rain water in holes, upon the rocks, which the ſpray of the ſea had rendered brackiſh; that the whole ſurface of the country was compoſed of ſlags and aſhes, interſperſed with a few plants.

To our great ſatisfaction, the Diſcovery made its appearance between ten and eleven, coming round the ſouth point of the iſland, and ſhe joined us about one. Captain Clerke then came on board the Reſolution, and acquainted us, that, having

having cruiſed four or five days where we were ſeparated, he plied round the eaſt ſide of the iſland; where, meeting with unfavourable winds, he had been driven to ſome diſtance from the coaſt. One of the iſlanders continued on board the whole time, at his own requeſt, having refuſed to leave the ſhip, though opportunities had preſented themſelves. The night was ſpent in ſtanding off and on. In the morning, we ſtood in again, and were viſited by many of the natives. At noon, the latitude was 19° 1′, and the longitude 203° 26′; the neareſt part of the iſland two leagues diſtant. On the 8th, at day-break, we perceived, that whilſt we were plying in the night, the currents had carried us back conſiderably to windward; and that we were now off the ſouth-weſt point of the iſland, where we brought to, in order to enable the inhabitants to trade with us.

The night was ſpent in ſtanding off and on. Four men and ten women, who came on board the preceding day, were with us ſtill. The Commodore not liking the company of the latter, we ſtood in ſhore, on the 9th, about noon, ſolely with a view of getting rid of our gueſts; when, ſome canoes coming off, we embraced that opportunity of ſending them away.

On the 10th, in the morning, we had light airs from north-weſt, and calms; at eleven, the wind freſhened at north-north-weſt, which ſo greatly

greatly retarded us, that, in the evening, at eight, the ſouth ſnowy hill bore north, 1½° eaſt.

At four o'clock in the morning of the 11th, the wind being at weſt, we approached the land, in expectation of getting ſome refreſhments. The natives, ſeeing us ſo near them, began to come off, and we continued trading with them the whole day; though we procured but a very ſcanty ſupply, many of thoſe who came off in their canoes, not having a ſingle thing to barter. From this circumſtance, it appeared, that this part of the iſland was extremely poor, and had already furniſhed us with every thing they could ſpare.

The 12th was employed in plying off and on, with a freſh gale at weſt. A mile from the ſhore we found ground, at the depth of fifty-five fathoms. At five, we ſtood to the ſouthward, and at midnight we had a calm. The next morning, at eight, we had a ſmall breeze at ſouth-ſouth-eaſt, and ſteered for the land.

A few canoes came off to us with ſome hogs; but they brought no vegetables, which were now much wanted. In the evening, we had got the length of the ſouth-weſt point of the iſland, but, by the veering of the wind, we loſt in the night all that we had gained in the day. Being in the ſame ſituation the next morning, ſome more canoes attended us; but they brought nothing which we ſtood in need of. We were now deſtitute of roots and fruit, and therefore obliged to

have recourſe to our ſea proviſions. Some canoes, however, arrived from the northward, which ſupplied us with ſome hogs and roots.

On the 15th, we had variable light airs till five in the afternoon, when a breeze at eaſt-north-eaſt ſprung up, and enabled us to ſteer along ſhore to the northward. The weather was this day remarkably fine, and we had plenty of company; many of whom continued with us on board all night, and their canoes were towed aſtern. On the 16th, at day-break, ſeeing the appearance of a bay, the Commodore ſent Mr. Bligh, with a boat from each ſhip, to ſurvey it, being now about three leagues off.

Canoes arrived from all quarters; inſomuch that, by ten o'clock in the morning, there were at leaſt a thouſand about the two ſhips, crouded with people, and laden with hogs and other proviſions. We were perfectly convinced of their having no hoſtile intentions; not a ſingle perſon having a weapon with him of any ſort. Trade and curioſity were their only inducements to viſit us. Such numbers as we had frequently on board, it might be expected that ſome of them ſhould betray a thieviſh diſpoſition. One of them took a boat's rudder from the ſhip, and was not detected till it was too late to recover it. Captain Cook imagined this to be a proper opportunity to ſhew theſe iſlanders the uſe of fire-arms; two or three muſquets, and as many four pounders,

were, by his orders, fired over the canoe which went away with the rudder. But, as the ſhot was not intended to take effect, the ſurrounding multitude were more ſurprized than frightened.

Mr. Bligh, when he returned in the evening, reported, that he had found a bay with good anchorage, and freſh water, in a deſirable ſituation. Into this bay, the Commodore determined to take his ſhips, in order to refit, and ſupply ourſelves with refreſhments. At the approach of night, the moſt conſiderable part of our viſiters retired to the ſhore; but many, at their own earneſt requeſt, were permitted to ſleep on board. Curioſity, at leaſt with ſome of them, was not the only motive; for ſeveral articles were miſſing the next morning; in conſequence of which, the Commodore came to a reſolution not to admit ſo many on any future night.

On the 17th, at eleven in the forenoon, we anchored in the bay, called by the natives *Karakakooa*, within a quarter of a mile of the north-eaſt ſhore. The ſouth point of the bay bearing ſouth by weſt, and the north point weſt half north. After we were moored, the ſhips continued much crouded with the natives, and ſurrounded by a vaſt multitude of canoes. In the courſe of our voyages, we had no where ſeen ſuch vaſt numbers of people aſſembled at one place. Beſides thoſe who viſited us in canoes, all the ſhore was covered with ſpectators, and hundreds were ſwimming

about the ſhips, like ſhoals of fiſh. We were ſtruck with the ſingularity of this ſcene; and few of us lamented that we had not ſucceeded in our late endeavours, to find a northern paſſage homeward. To this diſappointment, we were indebted for reviſiting the *Sandwich Iſlands*, and for enriching our voyage with a diſcovery, in many reſpects, the moſt important that has been made by Europeans in the Pacific Ocean.

A VOY-

A

# VOYAGE

TO THE

# PACIFIC OCEAN.

## BOOK V.

JOURNAL OF THE TRANSACTIONS ON RETURNING TO THE SANDWICH ISLANDS.

---

## CHAP. I.

*Karakakooa Bay deſcribed—Multitudes of the Natives ſurround the Ships—Deſpotic Authority of the Chiefs over the inferior People—A Viſit received from Koah—Deſcription of the Morai at Kakooa—Offering made to Captain Cook at the Morai—Mr. King erects Obſervatories—The Spot, on which they are ſituated, tabooed—Method of curing Meat in Tropical Climates—Society of Prieſts accidentally diſcovered—Their Munificence—Ceremony at the Reception of Captain Cook—Mean Artifice of Koah—Arrival of Terreeoboo—The Bay tabooed upon that Occaſion—Bring the Inhabitants to Obedience, by firing a Muſquet—Remarkable Ceremony—Viſit from Terreeoboo—Captain Cook returns it.*

THE Bay of Karakakooa is ſituated in the diſtrict of Akona, on the weſt ſide of the iſland of Owhyhee. It extends about a mile in

depth, and is bounded by two points of land, bearing ſouth-eaſt and north-weſt from each other, at the diſtance of half a league. The north point is flat and barren, on which is ſituated the village of Kowrowa. A more conſiderable village, called Kakooa, ſtands in the bottom of the bay, near a grove of ſtately cocoa-trees. A high rocky cliff, inacceſſible from the ſea-ſhore, runs between them. Near the coaſt, on the ſouth ſide, the land has a rugged appearance; beyond which the country gradually riſes, and abounds with cultivated incloſures, and groves of cocoa-trees. The habitations of the people are ſcattered about in great plenty. Round the bay the ſhore is covered with a black coral rock, except at Kakooa, where there is an excellent ſandy beach, with a *Morai* at one extremity, and a ſpring of freſh water at the other. We moored at the north ſide of this bay, and within a quarter of a mile from the ſhore.

The inhabitants, perceiving our intention to anchor in the bay, came off in aſtoniſhing numbers, expreſſing their joy by ſinging, ſhouting, and the moſt extravagant geſtures. The decks, ſides, and riggings of our ſhips were covered with them. Women and boys, who were unable to procure canoes, came ſwimming round us in great multitudes; ſome of whom, not finding room to get on board, amuſed themſelves the whole day by playing in the water.

One

One of the chiefs, who viſited the Reſolution, was named Pareea. Though a young man, we ſoon diſcovered him to be a perſon of great authority. He told Captain Cook that he was *Jakanee* * to the ſovereign of the iſland, who was then on a military expedition at Mowee; whence he was expected to return in a few days. Some preſents from the Commodore attached him to our intereſts, and we found him exceedingly uſeful to us. Before we had been long at anchor, the Diſcovery had ſo many people hanging on one ſide, that ſhe was obſerved to heel conſiderably; and our people found it impoſſible to prevent the crowds from preſſing into her. Captain Cook, apprehenſive that ſhe might receive ſome injury, communicated his fears to Pareea, who inſtantly cleared the ſhip of its incumbrances, and diſperſed the canoes that ſurrounded her.

From this circumſtance, it appears that the chiefs have a moſt deſpotic authority over the inferior people. An inſtance, ſimilar to this, happened on board the Reſolution; where the crowd ſo far impeded the ordinary buſineſs of the ſhip, that we found it neceſſary to apply to Kaneena, another chief, who had alſo attached himſelf particularly to Captain Cook. The inconvenience we ſuffered was no ſooner mentioned, than he ordered the natives immediately to quit the veſ-

* We could not learn with certainty whether this was a name of office, or expreſſive of ſome degree of affinity.

ſel; when, without a moment's heſitation, we ſaw them all jump over-board; except one perſon, who loitered behind, and, by his manner, expreſſed ſome degree of unwillingneſs to obey. Kaneena obſerving this contempt of his authority, took hold of him immediately, and threw him into the ſea.

Theſe two chiefs were exceedingly well proportioned, and had countenances remarkably pleaſing. Kaneena, whoſe portrait was drawn by Mr. Webber, was as fine a figure as can be ſeen. His height was about ſix feet, his features were regular and expreſſive, his deportment was eaſy, firm, and graceful, and he had dark lively eyes.

Mention has already been made, that, while we were cruizing off this iſland, the inhabitants had acted fairly and honeſtly, without manifeſting the leaſt propenſity to theft; which was the more remarkable, becauſe thoſe with whom we had hitherto had any dealings, were people of the loweſt rank, ſuch as fiſhermen or ſervants. The caſe was now exceedingly altered. The multitude of iſlanders, who blocked up every part of the ſhips, afforded opportunities of pilfering without danger of diſcovery, and even if detected, muſt have eſcaped with impunity from our inferiority in number. To the encouragement of their chiefs, this alteration might alſo be attributed; for, as we frequently traced the booty into the poſſeſſion

of

of ſome great men, there is little doubt but theſe depredations were made at their inſtigation.

The Reſolution having got into her ſtation, the two chiefs, Pareea and Kaneena, brought a third on board, whoſe name was Koah. He was repreſented to us as a prieſt, and one who, in his early days, had diſtinguiſhed himſelf as a warrior. He was a little old emaciated figure, having ſore red eyes, and his body covered with a leprous ſcurf, occaſioned by the immoderate uſe of the *ava*. Being conducted to the cabin, he approached the Commodore with the greateſt deference, threw a piece of red cloth over his ſhoulders, and, retreating a few paces, made an offering of a ſmall pig, at the ſame time pronouncing a diſcourſe of a conſiderable length.

During our continuance at Owhyhee, this ceremony was repeated often, and, from a variety of circumſtances, appeared to us to be a kind of religious adoration. Red cloth is an article with which their idols are arrayed, and a pig is their common offering to the *Eatooas*. Their ſpeeches were delivered with a volubility that indicated them to be conformable to ſome ritual.

At the concluſion of this ceremony, Koah dined with the Commodore, and eat plentifully of the viands before him; but, like moſt of the iſlanders in theſe ſeas, he could hardly be induced to taſte our wine or ſpirits a ſecond time. In the evening, the Commodore, Mr. King, and Mr. Baily,

accompanied him on ſhore. As ſoon as we landed on the beach, we were preceded by four men, bearing each a wand tipt with dog's hair, and pronouncing, with a loud voice, a ſhort ſentence, in which the word *Orono* * was very diſtinguiſhable. The crowd, which had aſſembled on the ſhore, retired at our approach; and not an individual was to be ſeen, except a few who had proſtrated themſelves on the ground, near the habitations of the adjacent village.

Before we relate an account of the peculiar ceremonies reſpecting the adoration paid to Captain Cook, it may not be unneceſſary to deſcribe the *Morai*, already mentioned, ſituated on the beach at *Kakooa*. It conſiſted of a ſquare ſolid pile of ſtones, of the length of forty yards, the breadth of twenty, and the height of fourteen. The top of it was flat, and a wooden rail ſurrounded it, on which were diſplayed the ſkulls of thoſe natives, who had been ſacrificed on the death of their chiefs. A ruinous wooden building was ſituated in the centre of the area, connected with the rail by a ſtone wall, dividing the whole ſpace into two parts. Five poles, of about twenty feet in height, ſupported an irregular kind of ſcaffold, on the ſide next the country; and,

* This was Captain Cook's general appellation among the natives of Owhyhee. Sometimes it was applied by them to an inviſible being inhabiting heaven. It was alſo a title of great rank in the iſland.

on

on the ſide towards the ſea, were two ſmall houſes, with a covered communication.

Koah conducted us to the top of this pile. At our entrance we beheld two large wooden images, with moſt diſtorted features, having a long piece of wood, proceeding from the top of their heads, of a conical form inverted; the other parts were covered with red cloth. Here Captain Cook was received by a tall young man, having a long beard, who preſented him to the images, and chanted a kind of hymn, in which he was aſſiſted by Koah. We were then led to that ſide of the Morai where the poles were erected; at the foot of which twelve images were ranged in the form of a ſemicircle; the middle figure having a high table before it like the *Whatta* of Otaheite, on which we ſaw a putrid hog, and under it ſome cocoa-nuts, plantains, potatoes, bread-fruit, and pieces of ſugar-cane. The Commodore was conducted under this ſtand by Koah; who, taking down the hog, held it towards him; when, having again addreſſed him in a long and vehement ſpeech, he ſuffered it to fall upon the ground, and aſcended the ſcaffolding with him, though at the peril of their falling.

We now beheld, advancing in ſolemn proceſſion, and entering the top of the *Morai*, ten men bearing a live hog, and a piece of large red cloth of conſiderable dimenſions. Advancing a few paces, they ſtopped, and proſtrated themſelves; and

Kaireekeea, the tall young man already mentioned, approaching them, received the cloth, and carried it to Koah, who wrapped it round the Commodore, and made him an offering of the hog.

Captain Cook was now aloft, in a ſituation truly whimſical, ſwathed in red cloth, and hardly able to keep his hold in the rotten ſcaffolding. In this ſituation he was entertained with the chanting of Koah and Kaireekeea, ſometimes in concert, and ſometimes alternately. After this office was performed, which was of conſiderable duration, Koah let the hog drop, and he and the Commodore immediately deſcended. He then conducted him to the images juſt mentioned, to each of which he expreſſed himſelf in a ſneering tone, ſnapping his fingers at them as he paſſed. He then preſented him to that in the centre; which, from its being habited in red cloth, appeared to be in the higheſt eſtimation. He fell proſtrate before this figure, and kiſſed it, requeſting Captain Cook would do the ſame; which he readily ſubmitted to, being determined to follow Koah's directions throughout the whole of this ceremony.

We were now conveyed into the other diviſion of the Morai, where a ſpace, of about twelve feet ſquare, was ſunk three feet below the level of the area. We deſcended into this, and the Commodore was immediately ſeated between two idols;

one of his arms being ſupported by Koah, and Mr. King was requeſted to ſupport the other. A ſecond proceſſion of natives, at this time, arrived with a baked hog, a pudding, ſome cocoa-nuts, bread-fruit, and other vegetables. As they drew near, Kaireekeea placed himſelf before them, and preſented the hog to the Commodore, in the uſual manner; chanting as before, and his companions making regular reſponſes. Their ſpeeches and reſponſes, we obſerved, grew gradually ſhorter and ſhorter, and, towards the concluſion, Kaireekeea's did not exceed three or four words, which was anſwered by the word *orono*.

At the concluſion of this offering, the natives ſeated themſelves fronting us, and began to cut up the baked hog, to break the cocoa-nuts, and to peel the vegetables. Others were employed in brewing the *ava*, by chewing it in the ſame manner as at the Friendly Iſlands. Kaireekeea then chewed part of the kernel of a cocoa-nut, and wrapped it in a piece of cloth, with which he rubbed the Captain's head, face, hands, arms, and ſhoulders. The *ava* was afterwards handed round, and when we had all taſted it, Koah and Pareea pulled the fleſh of the hog in pieces, and proceeded to put ſome of it into our mouths. Mr. King had no particular objection to being fed by Pareea, who was remarkably cleanly in his perſon; but Captain Cook, to whom a piece was preſented by Koah, could not ſwallow a morſel,

the

the putrid hog being ſtrong in his recollection; and as the old man, from motives of civility, had chewed it for him, his reluctance was much increaſed.

This ceremony being concluded, we quitted the *Morai*, after diſtributing among the populace ſome pieces of iron, and other articles, with which they were much delighted. We were then conducted, in proceſſion, to the boats; the men, with wands, attending, and pronouncing ſentences as before. Moſt of the natives again retired, and the remaining few proſtrated themſelves as we paſſed along the ſhore.

We went immediately on board, full of the idea of what we had ſeen, and perfectly ſatisfied with the honeſt diſpoſitions of our new friends. Of the ſingularity and novelty of the various ceremonies performed upon this occaſion, we can only form conjectures; but they were certainly highly expreſſive of reſpect on the part of the inhabitants; and, as far as related to the Commodore, they approached to adoration.

Mr. King went on ſhore, the next morning, with a guard of eight marines; having received orders to erect the obſervatory in a proper ſituation; by which means the waterers, and other working parties, on ſhore, might be ſuperintended and protected. Obſerving a convenient ſpot for this purpoſe, almoſt in the center of the village, Pareea immediately offered to exerciſe his

power

power in our behalf, and propoſed that ſome houſes ſhould be taken down, that our obſervations might not be obſtructed. This generous offer, however, was declined, and we made choice of a potatoe field, adjoining to the *Morai*, which was granted us moſt readily; and, to prevent the intruſion of the natives, the place was conſecrated by the prieſts, by placing their wands round the wall which incloſed it.

This interdiction the natives call *taboo*, a term frequently repeated by theſe iſlanders, and ſeemed to be a word of extenſive operation. In this inſtance, it procured us more privacy than we could have wiſhed. No canoes attempted to land near us; the natives only ſat on the wall, not daring to come within the *tabooed* ſpace without obtaining our permiſſion. The men, indeed, at our requeſt, would bring proviſions into the field; but our utmoſt endeavours were ineffectual to induce the women to approach us. Preſents were tried, but without ſucceſs. Attempts were made to prevail on Pareea and Koah to bring them, but to no purpoſe: the *Eatooa* and Terreeoboo, they ſaid, would kill them if they did.

This circumſtance afforded great amuſement to our friends on board, whither multitudes of people (particularly women) continually flocked; inſomuch that they were frequently obliged to clear the veſſel, in order to have room to perform their neceſſary duties. Two or three hundred

dred women were ſometimes obliged to jump, at once, into the water; where they continued to ſwim and play till they could be re-admitted.

Pareea and Koah left us on the 19th of January, in order to attend Terreeoboo, who had landed on a diſtant part of the iſland; and nothing material happened on board till the 24th. The caulkers were employed on the ſides of the ſhips, and the rigging was repaired. The ſalting of hogs was alſo a principal object of the Commodore's attention; and as we had improved in this operation ſince the former voyages, a detail of the proceſs of it may not be thought improper.

To cure the fleſh of animals, in tropical climates, by ſalting, has long been thought impracticable; putrefaction making ſo rapid a progreſs as not to allow the ſalt to take effect before the meat gets tainted. Captain Cook appears to be the firſt navigator who has attempted to make experiments relative to this buſineſs. His firſt attempts in 1774, in his ſecond voyage to the Pacific Ocean, ſo far ſucceeded, as to convince him of the error of the general opinion. As his preſent voyage was likely to be protracted a year beyond the time that proviſions had been ſupplied for the ſhips, he was obliged to contrive ſome method of procuring ſubſiſtence for the crews, or relinquiſh the proſecution of his diſcoveries. He, therefore, renewed his attempts,

and

and his moſt ſanguine expectations were completely anſwered.

The hogs we cured were of various ſizes, from four to ten or twelve ſtone, fourteen pound to the ſtone. They were always ſlaughtered in the afternoon; and, after ſcalding off the hair, and removing the entrails, the hog was cut into pieces, from four to eight pounds each, and the bones taken out of the legs and chine; in the larger ſort, the ribs were alſo taken out. The pieces were then carefully examined and wiped, and the coagulated blood taken from the veins. After this they were given to the ſalters whilſt they continued warm, and, when they were well rubbed with ſalt, placed in a heap on a ſtage in the open air, covered with planks, and preſſed with very heavy weights. The next evening they were again well wiped and examined, when the ſuſpicious parts were taken away. This done, they were put into a tub of ſtrong pickle, after which they were examined once or twice a day; and, if it happened that any piece had not taken the ſalt, which might be diſcovered by the ſmell of the pickle, they were inſtantly taken out and examined again, the ſound pieces being put into freſh pickle. This, however, did not often happen. At the end of ſix days, they were examined for the laſt time; and, after being ſlightly preſſed, they were put into barrels, having a thin layer of ſalt between them. Mr. King brought home

home ſome barrels of this pork, that had been pickled at Owhyhee, in January 1779, which was taſted here, by ſeveral perſons, about Chriſtmas 1780, who declared it to be perfectly ſound and wholeſome.

But to return from this digreſſion. We had not been long ſettled at the obſervatory, before we diſcovered the habitations of a ſociety of prieſts, who had excited our curioſity by their regular attendance at the *morai*. Their huts were erected round a pond, incloſed within a grove of cocoa-trees, by which they were ſeparated from the beach and the village, and gave the ſituation an air of religious retirement. Captain Cook being made acquainted with theſe circumſtances, he was determined to viſit them; and, expecting the manner of his reception would be ſingular, he took Mr. Webber with him, to enable him to repreſent the ceremony in a drawing.

When he arrived at the beach, he was conducted to *Harre-no-Orono*, or the houſe of Orono. On his approaching this ſacred place, he was ſeated at the foot of a wooden idol, reſembling thoſe which we had ſeen at the *morai*. Here Mr. King again ſupported one of his arms. He was then arrayed in red cloth, and Kaireekeea, aſſiſted by twelve prieſts, preſented a pig with the uſual ſolemnities. After this ceremony, the pig was ſtrangled, and thrown into the embers of a fire, prepared for that purpoſe. When the hair

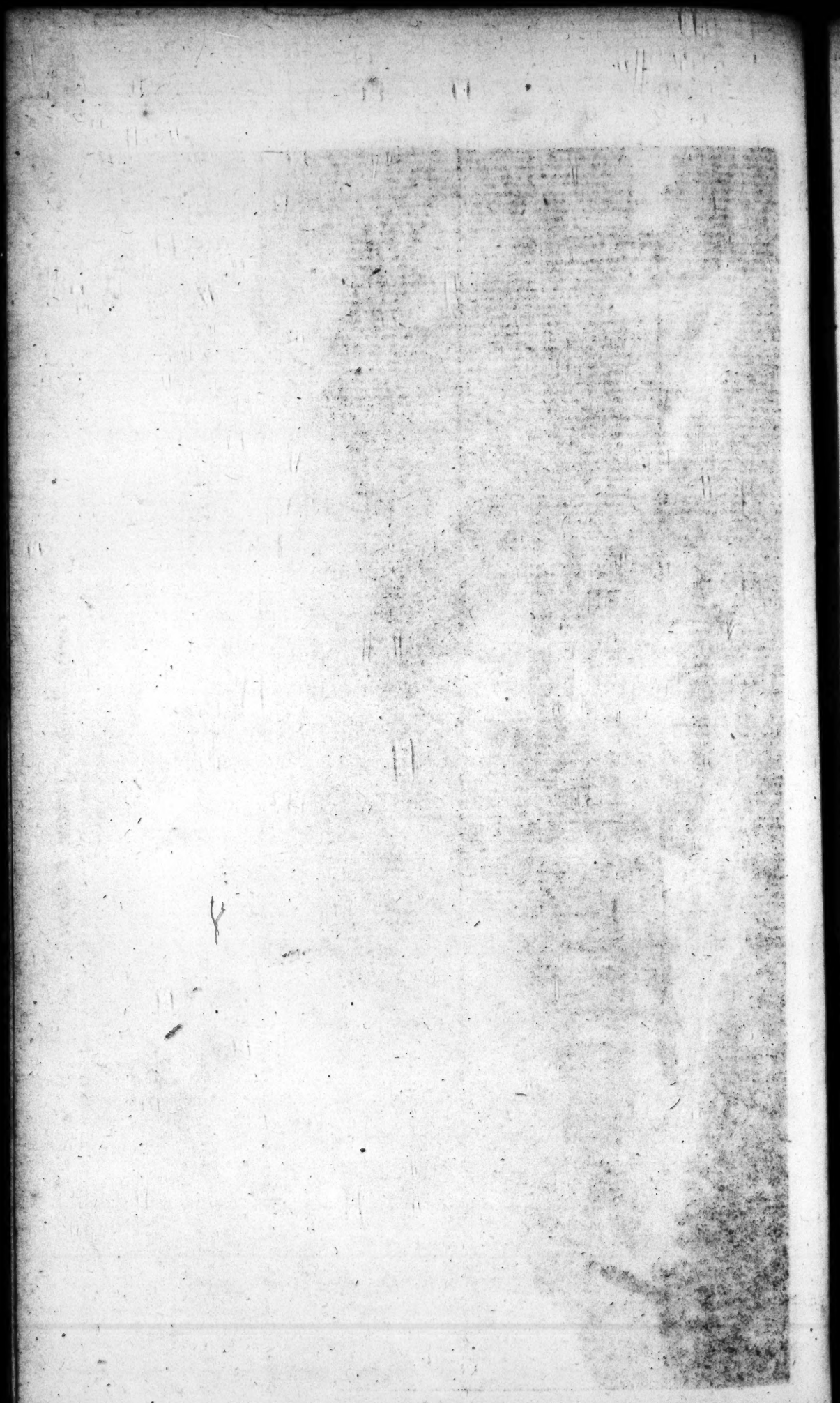
was

Cook's Voyage, Octavo Edition.



Webber del. Sigl. sc.

SUMMER and WINTER HABITATIONS in KAMTSCHATKA.



was ſinged off, a ſecond offering was made, and the chanting repeated as before; after which, the dead pig was held, for ſome time, under Captain Cook's noſe; and then laid, with a cocoa-nut, at his feet. This part of the ceremony being concluded, the performers ſat down; and the *ava* was brewed and handed about; a baked hog was brought in, and we were fed, as in the former ceremony.

While we continued on the bay, whenever the Commodore came on ſhore, he was preceded by one of theſe prieſts, who proclaimed the landing of the *Orono*, and ordered the inhabitants to proſtrate themſelves. He was conſtantly attended by the ſame perſon, on the water, where he was ſtationed in the bow of the boat, having a wand in his hand, to give notice of his approach to the natives, who were in canoes; on which they inſtantly ceaſed paddling, and fell on their faces till he had paſſed. Whenever he viſited the obſervatory, Kaireekeea and his aſſiſtants preſented themſelves before him, making an offering of hogs, bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, &c. with the accuſtomed ſolemnities. Upon theſe occaſions, ſome of the inferior chiefs entreated permiſſion to make an offering to the *Orono*. If their requeſt was complied with, they preſented the hog themſelves; in the performance of which, their countenances diſplayed that they were greatly impreſſed with awe and terror. Kaireekeea, and

the prieſts aſſiſted, and accompanied the ceremony with their accuſtomed hymns.

But their civilities extended beyond parade and ceremony; our party, on ſhore, were daily ſupplied by them with hogs and vegetables, ſufficient for our ſubſiſtence, and to ſpare; and canoes, laden with proviſions, were as regularly ſent off to the ſhips. Nothing was demanded in return, nor was the moſt diſtant hint ever given that any compenſation was expected. Their manner of conferring favours, appeared more like the diſcharge of a religious duty, than to reſult from mere liberality. On aſking to whom we were indebted for all this munificence, we were informed, that it was at the expence of Kaoo, the chief prieſt, and grandfather to Kaireekeea, who was then in the ſuit of the ſovereign of the iſland.

We had, indeeed, leſs reaſon to be ſatisfied with the behaviour of the warrior chiefs, than with that of the prieſts. In our intercourſe with the former, they were always ſufficiently attentive to their own intereſts; and, beſides their propenſity to ſtealing, which may admit of palliation from its univerſality in theſe ſeas, they had other artifices equally diſhonourable. The following is one inſtance, in which we diſcovered, with regret, that our good friend Koah was a party principally concerned.

The chiefs, who made us preſents of hogs, were always generouſly rewarded; in conſequence

of which, we were ſupplied with more than we could conſume. On theſe occaſions, Koah, who conſtantly attended us, uſually petitioned for thoſe that we did not abſolutely want, and they were given to him of courſe. A pig was, one day, preſented to us by a man whom Koah introduced as a chief; which we knew to be the pig that had, a ſhort time before, been given to Koah. Suſpecting we had been impoſed upon, we found, on further enquiry, that the pretended chief was one of the common people; and, from other concurrent circumſtances, we were perfectly convinced that, in many inſtances, we had been the dupes of ſimilar impoſition.

On Sunday the 24th, we were not a little ſurprized to find, that no canoes were permitted to put off, and that the natives confined themſelves to their houſes. At length, however, we were informed, that the bay was *tabooed*, and that all intercourſe with us was interdicted, on account of the arrival of Terreeoboo their king. Not apprehending an accident of this kind, the ſhips were deprived of their uſual ſupply of vegetables.

On Monday the 25th, in the morning, we endeavoured, by threats and promiſes, to induce the inhabitants to approach us. At length, ſome of them were venturing to put off, and a chief was obſerved to be very active in driving them away. In order to make him deſiſt, a muſquet was inſtantly fired over his head, which operated

as it was intended, and refreſhments were ſoon after to be had as uſual. In the afternoon, the ſhips were privately viſited by Terreeoboo, attended only by one canoe, which had his wife and family on board. After ſtaying till almoſt ten o'clock, he returned to the village of Kowrowa.

About noon the next day, the king, in a large canoe, with ſome attendants in two others, paddled from the village, in great ſtate, towards the ſhips. Their appearance was noble and magnificent. Terreeoboo, and his chiefs, were in the firſt canoe, arrayed in feathered cloaks and helmets, and armed with ſpears and daggers. In the ſecond, came Kaoo, the chief prieſt, together with his brethren, having their idols diſplayed on red cloth. Theſe idols were figures of an enormous ſize, made of wicker-work, and curiouſly ornamented with ſmall feathers of a variety of colours. Their eyes were large pearl oyſters, with a black nut placed in the centre; a double row of the fangs of dogs was fixed in each of their mouths, which, as well as the reſt of their features, appeared ſtrangely diſtorted. The third canoe was laden with hogs and vegetables. As they advanced, the prieſts, in the ſecond canoe, chanted their hymns with great ſolemnity. After paddling round the veſſels, they did not come on board, as we expected, but made immediately

ately towards the ſhore, at the beach where we were ſtationed.

When Mr. King beheld them approaching, he ordered our little guard to receive the king; and Captain Cook, ſeeing that he intended to go on ſhore, went thither alſo, and landed almoſt at the ſame inſtant. We uſhered them into the tent, and the king had hardly been ſeated, when he roſe up, and gracefully threw over the Captain's ſhoulders, the rich feathered cloak that he himſelf wore, placed a helmet on his head, and preſented him with a curious fan. Five or ſix other cloaks, of great beauty and value, were ſpread at the Commodore's feet.

Four hogs were then brought forward, by the king's attendants, together with bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, and ſugar-canes. Then followed the ceremony of Terreeoboo's changing names with Captain Cook; the ſtrongeſt pledge of friendſhip among all the iſlanders of the Pacific Ocean. A ſolemn proceſſion now advanced, conſiſting of prieſts, preceded by a venerable old perſonage, followed by a train of people leading large hogs; others being laden with potatoes, plantains, &c. We could inſtantly perceive, by the countenance and geſtures of Kaireekeea, that the old man who headed the proceſſion, was the chief prieſt, on whoſe bounty we were told we had ſo long ſubſiſted. He wrapped a piece of red cloth round the ſhoulders of Captain Cook, and, in the uſual

form, preſented him with a pig. He was then ſeated next the king, and Kaireekeea, and his attendants began their vocal ceremonies, Kaoo and the chiefs aſſiſting in the reſponſes.

In the perſon of this king, we were ſurprized to recognize the ſame emaciated old man, who came on board the Reſolution, from the north-eaſt ſide of the iſland of Mowee; and we perceived, that ſeveral of his attendants were the ſame perſons who, at that time, continued with us the whole night. Among theſe were the king's two youngeſt ſons, the eldeſt about the age of ſixteen; and Maiha-Maiha, his nephew, whom we could not immediately recollect, having had his hair plaſtered over with a dirty paſte and powder, which was no bad improvement to the moſt ſavage countenance we had ever ſeen.

The formalities of the meeting being ended, Captain Cook conducted Terreeoboo, and ſeveral of his chiefs, on board the Reſolution. They were received with every poſſible attention and reſpect; and the Commodore, as a compenſation for the feathered cloak, put a linen ſhirt upon the ſovereign, and girt his own hanger round him. Kaoo, and about half a dozen other ancient chiefs, remained on ſhore.

All this time, not a canoe was permitted to appear in the bay, and thoſe natives who did not confine themſelves to their huts, lay proſtrate on the ground. Before the king quitted the Reſolution,

lution, he granted leave for the natives to trade with the ſhips, as uſual; but the women (we know not on what account) were ſtill interdicted by the *taboo*; that is, to remain at home, and not have any kind of intercourſe with us.

---

## CHAP. II.

*The Civility and Hoſpitality of the Natives—Much addicted to thieving—Their Alacrity in conducting a Party of us up the Country—A Boxing-Match deſcribed—Death of William Watman, a Seaman—Attention of the Prieſts at his Funeral—Ceremony of the Natives at his Funeral—A Grave-Stone erected—The Rail and Images on the Morai purchaſed—The Natives very inquiſitive about our Departure—What they ſuppoſed to be the Object of our Voyage—Entertained by the Buffoonery of one of the Natives—Magnificent Preſents from Terreeoboo—The Natives regret our Departure—Wiſh to prevail on Mr. King to remain amongſt them—The Veſſels quit the Iſland—The Reſolution damaged in a Gale of Wind, and obliged to return.*

THE behaviour of the inhabitants was ſo civil and inoffenſive, that all apprehenſions of danger were totally vaniſhed. We truſted our-

ſelves amongſt them at all times, and upon all occaſions, without the leaſt heſitation. The officers ventured frequently up the country, either ſingly, or in ſmall parties, and ſometimes continued out the whole night. To relate all the inſtances of generoſity and civility, which we experienced upon theſe occaſions, would require volumes. In all places, the people flocked about us, anxious to afford every aſſiſtance in their power, and appeared highly gratified if we condeſcended to accept of their ſervices. Variety of innocent arts were practiſed to attract our notice, or to delay our departure. The boys and girls ran through their villages before us, ſtopping us at every opening, where there was a commodious place to form a group for dancing. We were, at one time, ſolicited to take a draught of the milk of cocoa-nuts, or accept of ſuch other refreſhment as their huts afforded; at another we were encircled by a company of young women, who exerted their ſkill and agility in amuſing us with ſongs and dances.

But though their gentleneſs and hoſpitality were pleaſing to us, they were addicted to ſtealing, like all the other iſlanders of theſe ſeas. This was a diſtreſſing circumſtance, and ſometimes obliged us to exerciſe ſeverity, which we ſhould have been happy to have avoided, if it had not been eſſentially neceſſary. Some expert ſwimmers were one day detected under the ſhips, drawing

ing out the filling nails from the ſheathing, which they ingeniouſly performed with a flint ſtone, faſtened to the end of a ſhort ſtick. This practice was ſo injurious to our veſſels, that we fired ſmall ſhot at the offenders; but that they eaſily evaded, by diving under the ſhip's bottom. It therefore became highly neceſſary to make an example of one of them, by flogging him on board the Diſcovery.

A large party of gentlemen, from both ſhips, ſet out, about this time, on an excurſion into the country, in order to examine its natural productions; an account of which will be hereafter given. At preſent, however, we ſhall obſerve, that it afforded Kaoo a freſh opportunity of exerciſing his civility and generoſity. No ſooner was he informed of their departure, than he ſent after them a large quantity of proviſions, with orders, that every attention and aſſiſtance ſhould be granted them by the inhabitants of thoſe diſtricts through which they were to paſs. His conduct, on this occaſion, was ſo delicate and diſintereſted, that even the people he employed were not permitted to accept of the ſmalleſt preſent. At the end of ſix days, the gentlemen returned, without having penetrated more than twenty miles into the iſland; owing partly to improper guides, and partly to the impracticability of the country.

On the 27th, the Reſolution's rudder was unhung, and ſent on ſhore, in order to undergo a thorough

thorough repair. The carpenters, at the ſame time, were ſent into the country, under the guidance of ſome of Kaoo's people, to get planks for the head rail work, which was become rotten and decayed.

Captain Clerke, who was generally confined on board by ill health, paid Terreeoboo his firſt viſit on the 28th, at his habitation on ſhore. The ceremonies obſerved with Captain Cook, were performed in honour of Captain Clerke; and, on his return, he received a preſent of thirty large hogs, and ſuch a quantity of vegetables as could not be conſumed, by his crew, in leſs than a week. This was the more extraordinary, as it was quite an unexpected viſit.

Not having ſeen any of their ſports or exerciſes, the natives, at our particular requeſt, entertained us in the evening with a boxing match. Though theſe games were inferior, in every reſpect, to thoſe we had ſeen exhibited at the Friendly Iſlands; yet, as they were ſomewhat different, a ſhort account of them may not be thought improper.

A vaſt concourſe of people aſſembled on an even ſpot of ground, not far diſtant from our tents. A long vacant ſpace was left in the centre of them, at the upper end of which the judges preſided, under three ſtandards. Slips of cloth, of various colours, were pendant from theſe ſtandards; as were the ſkins of two wild geeſe, ſome ſmall birds, and a few bunches of feathers.

The

The ſports being ready to begin, the judges gave the ſignal, and two combatants appeared in view. They advanced ſlowly, drawing up their feet very high behind, and rubbing their hands upon the ſoles. As they came forward, they frequently ſurveyed each other from head to foot, with an air of contempt, looking archly at the ſpectators, diſtorting their features, and practiſing a variety of unnatural geſtures. When they were advanced within the reach of each other, they held both arms ſtraight out before their faces, at which part they always aimed their blows. They ſtruck with a full ſwing of the arm, which to us had a very awkward appearance. They did not attempt to parry; but endeavoured to elude their adverſary's attack, by ſtooping, or retreating. The battle was expeditiouſly decided; for if either of them fell, whether by accident, or from a blow, he was deemed vanquiſhed; and the victor expreſſed his triumph by a variety of ſtrange geſtures, which uſually excited a loud laugh among the ſpectators, for which purpoſe it ſeemed to be calculated. The ſucceſsful combatant waited for a ſecond antagoniſt; and, if again victorious, for a third; and ſo on, till he was at laſt defeated.

It was very ſingular, in theſe combats, that, when any two are preparing to attack each other, a third may advance, and make choice of either of them for his antagoniſt, when the other is under

der the neceſſity of withdrawing. If the combat proved long and tedious, or appeared unequal, a chief generally interfered, and concluded it by putting a ſtick between the combatants. As this exhibition was at our deſire, it was univerſally expected that ſome of us would have engaged with the natives; but, though our people received preſſing invitations to bear a part, they did not hearken to the challenges, not having forgot the blows they received at the Friendly Iſlands.

William Watman, a ſeaman of the gunner's crew, died this day: this event is the more particularly mentioned, as death had hitherto been uncommon amongſt us. He was a man in years, and much reſpected for his attachment to Captain Cook. He had ſerved twenty-one years as a marine, and then entered as a ſeaman in 1772, on board the Reſolution, and ſerved with the Commodore in his voyage towards the ſouth pole. On their return, he got admittance into Greenwich Hoſpital, through the intereſt of Captain Cook, at the ſame time with himſelf; and, anxious to follow the fortunes of his benefactor, he alſo quitted it with him, on his appointment to the command of the preſent expedition. He had been often ſubject to ſlight fevers, in the courſe of the voyage, and was infirm when we arrived in the bay; where, having been ſent for a few days on ſhore, he thought himſelf perfectly re-

ſtored, and requeſted to return on board. His requeſt was complied with; but the day following he had a ſtroke of the palſy, which, in two days afterwards, put a period to his life.

At the requeſt of Terreeoboo, the remains of this honeſt ſeaman were buried on the *morai*; the ceremony being performed with great ſolemnity. Kaoo and his brethren were preſent at the funeral, who behaved with great decorum, and paid due attention while the ſervice was performing. On our beginning to fill up the grave, they approached it with great awe, and threw in a dead pig, together with ſome cocoa-nuts and plantains. For three ſucceſſive nights they ſurrounded it, ſacrificing hogs, and reciting hymns and prayers till morning.

We erected a poſt at the head of the grave, and nailed thereon a piece of board; on which was inſcribed the name and age of the deceaſed, and the day of his departure from this life. Theſe they aſſured us they would not remove, and they will probably be permitted to remain, ſo long as ſuch frail materials can endure.

Our ſhips were much in want of fuel, therefore Captain Cook deſired Mr. King to treat with the prieſts, for the purchaſe of the rail on the *morai*. Mr. King had his doubts about the decency of this overture, and apprehended that the bare mention of it might be deemed impious; but in this he was exceedingly miſtaken. They

expreſſed

expreſſed no kind of ſurprize at the application, and the wood was delivered without the leaſt ſtipulation. Whilſt our people were taking it away, he ſaw one of them with a carved image; and, upon enquiry, was informed, that the whole ſemicircle (as mentioned in the deſcription of the *morai*) had been carried to the boats.

Though the natives were ſpectators of this buſineſs, they did not ſeem to reſent it; but, on the contrary, had even aſſiſted in the removal. Mr. King thought proper to mention the particulars to Kaoo; who ſeemed exceedingly indifferent about the matter, begging him only to reſtore the center image; which was immediately done, and it was conveyed to one of the prieſt's houſes.

The king, and his chiefs, had, for ſome time, been very importunate to know the time of our departure. Mr. King's curioſity was excited, from this circumſtance, to know the opinion theſe people had entertained of us, and what they ſuppoſed to be the objects of our voyage. He took conſiderable pains to ſatisfy himſelf on theſe points; but the only information he could get was, that they ſuppoſed we had left our native country on account of the ſcantineſs of proviſions, and that we had viſited them for the ſole purpoſe of filling our bellies. This concluſion was natural enough, conſidering the meagre appearance of ſome of our crew, the voracity with which

which we devoured their freſh proviſions, and our anxiety to purchaſe as much of it as we were able. One circumſtance may be added to theſe, which puzzled them exceedingly; that of our having no women with us.

It was matter of entertainment to ſee the natives patting the bellies of the ſailors (who were much improved in ſleekneſs ſince their arrival at the bay) and telling them, in the beſt manner they could, that it was time for them to depart; but, if they would return the next bread-fruit ſeaſon, they ſhould be better able to ſupply them. We had now continued ſixteen days in the bay, during which time our conſumption of hogs and vegetables had been ſo enormous, that we need not be ſurprized at their wiſhing to ſee us take our leave. But Terreeoboo had, perhaps, no other view, in his enquiries, than a deſire of having ſufficient notice, to prepare ſuitable preſents for us at our departure; for, when we informed him of our intention to quit the iſland in two days, a kind of proclamation was immediately made, requiring the natives to bring in their hogs and vegetables, for Terreeoboo to preſent to the *Orono*.

At the beach, we were this day much entertained, with the buffooneries of one of the natives. In his hand he held an inſtrument of muſic, ſuch as we have already deſcribed; bits of ſea-weed were faſtened round his neck; and, round each leg,

leg, ſome ſtrong netting; on which were fixed ſome rows of dogs teeth, hanging looſe. His dancing was accompanied with ſtrange grimaces, and unnatural diſtortions of the features; which, though ſometimes highly ridiculous, was, upon the whole, without meaning or expreſſion. Mr. Webber made a drawing of this perſon; the manner in which the maro is tied; the figure of the inſtrument, and of the ornaments round the legs.

Wreſtling and boxing matches afforded us diverſion for the evening; and we, in return, exhibited the few fireworks we had remaining. Nothing could more effectually excite the admiration of theſe iſlanders, or ſtrike them with more exalted ideas of our ſuperiority, than ſuch a repreſentation. Though this was, in every reſpect, much inferior to that at Hapaee, yet the aſtoniſhment of the people was equally great.

The carpenters which had been ſent up the country, to cut planks for the head rail-work of the Reſolution, had now been gone three days; and, not having heard from them, we began to be alarmed for their ſafety. We expreſſed our apprehenſions to old Kaoo, who appeared equally concerned with ourſelves; but while we were planning meaſures with him, for ſending proper perſons after them, they all ſafely arrived. They went farther into the country than they expected, before they found any trees ſuitable for their purpoſe. This circumſtance, together with the bad-

neſs

neſs of the roads, and the difficulty of conveying the timber to the ſhips, had ſo long detained them. They beſtowed high commendations on their guides, who not only ſupplied them with proviſions, but faithfully protected their tools.

The 4th of February being fixed for our departure, Terreeoboo invited Captain Cook and Mr. King, to attend him, on the 3d, to Kaoo's reſidence. On our arrival there, we ſaw large quantities of cloth lie ſcattered on the ground; abundance of red and yellow feathers, faſtened to the fibres of cocoa-nut huſks; and plenty of hatchets and iron ware, which had been received from us in barter. Not far from theſe was depoſited an immenſe quantity of various kinds of vegetables; and, at a little diſtance, a large herd of hogs. We ſuppoſed, at firſt, that the whole was intended as a preſent for us; but we were informed, by Kaireekeea, that it was a tribute to the king, from the inhabitants of that diſtrict. And, we were no ſooner ſeated, than the bundles were brought, and laid ſeverally at Terreeoboo's feet; and the cloth, feathers, and iron, were diſplayed before him.

The king was perfectly ſatisfied with this mark of duty from his people; and ſelected about a third of the iron utenſils, a third of the feathers, and ſome pieces of cloth; he ordered theſe to be ſet aſide by themſelves; and the remainder of the cloth, hogs, vegetables, &c. were afterwards pre-

leg, ſome ſtrong netting; on which were fixed ſome rows of dogs teeth, hanging looſe. His dancing was accompanied with ſtrange grimaces, and unnatural diſtortions of the features; which, though ſometimes highly ridiculous, was, upon the whole, without meaning or expreſſion. Mr. Webber made a drawing of this perſon; the manner in which the maro is tied; the figure of the inſtrument, and of the ornaments round the legs.

Wreſtling and boxing matches afforded us diverſion for the evening; and we, in return, exhibited the few fireworks we had remaining. Nothing could more effectually excite the admiration of theſe iſlanders, or ſtrike them with more exalted ideas of our ſuperiority, than ſuch a repreſentation. Though this was, in every reſpect, much inferior to that at Hapaee, yet the aſtoniſhment of the people was equally great.

The carpenters which had been ſent up the country, to cut planks for the head rail-work of the Reſolution, had now been gone three days; and, not having heard from them, we began to be alarmed for their ſafety. We expreſſed our apprehenſions to old Kaoo, who appeared equally concerned with ourſelves; but while we were planning meaſures with him, for ſending proper perſons after them, they all ſafely arrived. They went farther into the country than they expected, before they found any trees ſuitable for their purpoſe. This circumſtance, together with the bad-

neſs

neſs of the roads, and the difficulty of conveying the timber to the ſhips, had ſo long detained them. They beſtowed high commendations on their guides, who not only ſupplied them with proviſions, but faithfully protected their tools.

The 4th of February being fixed for our departure, Terreeoboo invited Captain Cook and Mr. King, to attend him, on the 3d, to Kaoo's reſidence. On our arrival there, we ſaw large quantities of cloth lie ſcattered on the ground; abundance of red and yellow feathers, faſtened to the fibres of cocoa-nut huſks; and plenty of hatchets and iron ware, which had been received from us in barter. Not far from theſe was depoſited an immenſe quantity of various kinds of vegetables; and, at a little diſtance, a large herd of hogs. We ſuppoſed, at firſt, that the whole was intended as a preſent for us; but we were informed, by Kaireekeea, that it was a tribute to the king, from the inhabitants of that diſtrict. And, we were no ſooner ſeated, than the bundles were brought, and laid ſeverally at Terreeoboo's feet; and the cloth, feathers, and iron, were diſplayed before him.

The king was perfectly ſatisfied with this mark of duty from his people; and ſelected about a third of the iron utenſils, a third of the feathers, and ſome pieces of cloth; he ordered theſe to be ſet aſide by themſelves; and the remainder of the cloth, hogs, vegetables, &c. were afterwards pre-

ſented to Captain Cook and Mr. King. The value and magnitude of this preſent, far exceeded any thing that we had met with. The whole was immediately conveyed on board. The large hogs were ſelected, in order to be ſalted for ſea ſtore; but the ſmaller pigs, and the vegetables, were divided between the crews.

We left the *morai*, and got our obſervatories on board. The *taboo* was removed, and, with it, its magical effects. As ſoon as we had quitted the place, the people ruſhed in, and vigilantly ſearched; hoping to find ſome valuable articles left behind. Mr. King being the laſt on ſhore, and waiting for the return of the boat, the inhabitants crowded about him, and having prevailed on him to ſit down among them, expreſſed their regret at our ſeparation. It was even with difficulty that they would ſuffer him to depart. He was, indeed, highly eſteemed among them, as will appear from the following relation.

Having had, while we were in the bay, the command of the party on ſhore, he became more acquainted with the natives, and they with him, than thoſe who were required to be on board. He experienced great kindneſs and civility from the inhabitants in general, but the friendſhip ſhewn by the prieſts was conſtant and unbounded.

He was anxious to conciliate their eſteem; in which he ſo happily ſucceeded, that, when they were acquainted with the time of our departure, he

he was urged to remain behind, and received overtures of the moſt flattering kind. When he endeavoured to excuſe himſelf, by alledging, that Captain Cook would not permit it, they propoſed to conduct him to the mountains, and there conceal him till the departure of the ſhips. On Mr. King's aſſuring them, that the Captain would not ſail without him, the king and Kaoo repaired to Captain Cook, (whom they ſuppoſed to be his father) formally requeſting that he might be ſuffered to remain behind. The Commodore, unwilling to give a poſitive refuſal, to a propoſal ſo generouſly intended, aſſured them, that he could not then part with him; but he ſhould return thither the next year, when he would endeavour to oblige them.

On Thurſday the 4th of February, early in the morning, we unmoored, and the Reſolution and Diſcovery ſailed out of the bay; attended by a vaſt number of canoes. It was Captain Cook's intention to finiſh the ſurvey of Owhyhee, before he went to the other iſlands, hoping to meet with a road more ſheltered than Karakakooa Bay; and, if he ſhould not ſucceed here, he meant to examine the ſouth-eaſt part of Mowee, where he had been informed, there was a moſt excellent harbour.

On the 5th, and the following day, we had calm weather, and conſequently our progreſs was but ſlow. A great number of the natives fol-

lowed us in their canoes; and Terreeoboo gave an additional proof of his eſteem for the Commodore, by ſending after him a large preſent of hogs and vegetables.

Having a light breeze, in the night of the 5th of February, we made ſome progreſs to the northward; and, on the 6th, in the morning, we were abreaſt of a deep bay, which the natives call Toe-yah-yah. We flattered ourſelves with hopes of finding a commodious harbour in this bay, as we ſaw ſome fine ſtreams of water to the north-eaſt; and the whole appeared to be well ſheltered. Theſe obſervations ſeeming to tally with the accounts given us by Koah, who now accompanied Captain Cook, the Maſter was ſent in the pinnace, with Koah as his guide, to obſerve and examine the bay; Koah having firſt altered his name, out of compliment to us, to that of Britannee.

The weather became gloomy in the afternoon, and ſuch violent guſts of wind blew off the land, that we were obliged to take in all the ſails, and bring to, under the mizen-ſtay-ſail. The canoes all left us as ſoon as the gale began; and Mr. Bligh, on his return, preſerved an old woman and two men from drowning, whoſe canoe had been overſet in the ſtorm. We had ſeveral women remaining on board, whom the natives, in their hurry to depart, had left to ſhift for themſelves.

Mr.

Mr. Bligh reported, that he had landed at a village on the north ſide of the bay, where he was ſhewn ſome wells of water, that would not, by any means, anſwer our purpoſe; that he proceeded further into the bay; where, inſtead of meeting with good anchorage, he found the ſhores were low, and a flat bed of coral rocks extended along the coaſt, and upwards of a mile from the land; the depth of water, on the outſide, being twenty fathoms. During this ſurvey, Britannee had contrived to ſlip away, being, perhaps, afraid of returning, as his information had proved erroneous.

The weather became more moderate in the evening, and we again made ſail; but it blew ſo violently about midnight, as to ſplit the fore and main-top-ſails. We bent freſh ſails in the morning of the 7th, and had a light breeze, and fair weather. Being now about four or five leagues from the ſhore, and the weather very unſettled, the canoes would not venture off, ſo that our gueſts were under the neceſſity of remaining with us, though much againſt their inclination; for they were all exceedingly ſea-ſick, and many of them had left their infants on ſhore.

Though the weather continued ſqually, we ſtood in for the land in the afternoon; and, being within three leagues of it, we ſaw two men in a canoe, paddling towards us. We naturally conjectured that they had been driven off the ſhore,

by the late violent gale; and ſtopped the ſhip's way, in order to take them in. They were ſo exhauſted with fatigue, that had not one of the natives on board jumped into the canoe to their aſſiſtance, they would hardly have been able to fix it to the rope thrown out for that purpoſe. With difficulty, however, we got them up the ſhip's ſide, together with a child about four years of age, which had been laſhed under the thwarts of the canoe, with only its head above the water. They informed us, that they had quitted the land the morning before, ſince which time they had not had food or water. Proviſion was given them with the uſual precautions, and the child entruſted to the care of one of the women; and, the next morning, they were all perfectly recovered.

A gale of wind coming on at midnight, we were obliged to double reef the top-ſails. At day-break, on the 8th, we found that the foremaſt had again given way; the fiſhes being ſprung, and the parts ſo very defective, as to make it abſolutely neceſſary to unſtep the maſt. Captain Cook, for ſome time, heſitated, whether he ſhould return to Karakakooa, or take the chance of finding a harbour in the iſlands to leeward. The bay was not ſo commodious, but that a better might probably be met with, either for repairing the maſts, or procuring refreſhments; the latter of which, it was imagined, the neighbourhood

bourhood of Karakakooa had lately been pretty well drained of. It was, on the other hand, conſidered as an imprudent ſtep, to leave a tolerable good harbour, which, once loſt, could not be regained, for the mere poſſibility of meeting with a better; eſpecially as the failure of ſuch a contingency, might have deprived us of any reſource.

We ſtood on towards the land, to give the natives on ſhore an opportunity of releaſing their friends on board; and, about noon, when we were within a mile of the ſhore, ſeveral canoes came off to us, but ſo loaded with people, that no room could be found for any of our gueſts; the pinnace was therefore hoiſted out to land them; and the Maſter who commanded it, was inſtructed to examine the ſouth coaſts of the bay for water, but returned without ſucceſs.

Variable winds, and a ſtrong current to the northward, retarded our progreſs in our return; and, in the evening of the 9th, about eight o'clock, it blew very hard from the ſouth-eaſt, which occaſioned us to cloſe reef the top-ſails. Early in the morning of the 10th, in a heavy ſquall, we found ourſelves cloſe in with the breakers, to the northward of the weſt point of Owhyhee. We had juſt room to avoid them, and fired ſeveral guns to alarm the Diſcovery, and apprize her of the danger.

The weather, in the forenoon, was more moderate, and a few canoes ventured to come off to us; when thoſe on board them informed us, that much miſchief had been occaſioned by the late ſtorms, and that a great many canoes had been loſt. We kept beating to windward the remainder of the day; and, in the evening, were within a mile of the bay; but we ſtood off and on till day-light the next morning, when we anchored in our old ſtation.

CHAP.

## CHAP. III.

*The Behaviour of the Iſlanders, on our Return to Karakakooa Bay, ſomewhat myſterious—A Theft committed on board the Diſcovery—The Thieves purſued up the Country by Captain Cook and Mr. King—Scuffle between the Natives and our People, in which Pareea receives a ſevere Blow—The Pinnace attacked and plundered—Crew obliged to quit her—Captain Cook's Reflections on the Occaſion—Attempt at the Obſervatory—The Diſcovery's Cutter ſtolen from the Buoy—Steps taken for its Recovery—Captain Cook goes on Shore to invite the King and his two Sons on board—His Wife and the Chiefs oppoſe his going—A Conteſt ariſes on the Occaſion—Intelligence arrives of one of the Chiefs being killed by one of our People—The Conſequences—A Chief threatens Captain Cook, and is ſhot by him—A general Attack enſues—Death of Captain Cook—Account of his Services, and a Sketch of his Character.*

THE whole of the 11th, and part of the 12th of February, we were engaged in getting out the foremaſt, and conveying it on ſhore. Not only the head of the maſt had ſuſtained damage, but the heel was become exceedingly rotten, having a very large hole in the middle of it. Several days being probably required to make

the neceſſary repairs, Meſſieurs King and Baily got the obſervatory on ſhore, and pitched their tents on the *morai*, guarded by a corporal, and ſix marines. A friendly intercourſe was renewed with the prieſts, who, for our greater ſecurity, *tabooed* the place with their wands as before. The ſail-makers alſo repaired to the ſhore to repair the damages, in their department, ſuſtained by the late heavy gales. They occupied an habitation, lent us by the prieſts, adjoining to the *morai*.

Our reception, on coming to anchor, was ſo different from what it had been upon our firſt arrival, that we were all aſtoniſhed: no ſhouts, buſtle, or confuſion, but a ſolitary deſerted bay, with hardly a canoe ſtirring. Their curioſity, indeed, might be ſuppoſed to be diminiſhed by this time; but the hoſpitable treatment we had continually been favoured with, and the friendly footing on which we parted, induced us to expect that, on our return, they would have received us with the greateſt demonſtrations of joy.

Various were our conjectures on the cauſe of this extraordinary appearance, when the whole myſtery was unravelled by the return of a boat, which we had ſent on ſhore, bringing intelligence that Terreeoboo was abſent, and that the bay was *tabooed*. This account appeared very ſatisfactory to many of us; but others were of opinion, that there was, at this time, ſomething very ſuſpicious in the beha-

behaviour of the natives; and that the *taboo*, or interdiction, on pretence of Terreeoboo's abſence, was artfully contrived, to give him time to conſult his chiefs in what manner we ſhould be treated. We never could aſcertain whether theſe ſuſpicions were well founded, or whether the natives had given a true account. It is probable, indeed, that our ſudden return, for which they could aſſign no apparent cauſe, might create alarms in them; yet the conduct of Terreeoboo, who, on his ſuppoſed arrival the next morning, immediately waited on Captain Cook; and the natives, from that moment, renewing their friendly intercourſe with us, ſeem to evince that they neither meant, nor apprehended, a different kind of conduct.

An account of another accident, ſimilar to this, may be mentioned in ſupport of this opinion, which happened to us on our firſt viſit, the day before the king's arrival. A native having ſold a hog on board the Reſolution, and received the price agreed on, Pareea, who ſaw the tranſaction, adviſed the ſeller not to part with his hog, without an advanced price. For his interference in this buſineſs, he was harſhly ſpoken to, and puſhed away; and as the *taboo* was ſoon laid on the bay, we, at firſt, ſuppoſed it to be in conſequence of the affront offered to the chief.

Theſe two circumſtances conſidered, it is extremely difficult to draw any certain concluſion from

from the actions of a people, with whoſe language and cuſtoms we are ſo imperfectly acquainted. Some idea, however, may be formed of the difficulties thoſe have to encounter, who, in their intercourſe with theſe ſtrangers, are obliged to ſteer their courſe in the midſt of uncertainty, where the moſt ſerious conſequences may be occaſioned by only imaginary offences. Whether theſe conjectures are erroneous or true, it is certain that things were conducted in their uſual quiet courſe, till the 13th of February, in the afternoon.

At the approach of evening on that day, the commander of the Diſcovery's watering party, came to inform Mr. King, that ſeveral chiefs were aſſembled near the beach, and were driving away the natives, who aſſiſted the ſailors in rolling the caſks to the ſhore: at the ſame time declaring, that their behaviour ſeemed exceedingly ſuſpicious, and that he imagined they would give him ſome farther diſturbance. He ſent a marine with him, agreeably to his requeſt, but permitted him to take only his ſide-arms. The officer, in a ſhort time, returned, and informed Mr. King that the inhabitants had armed themſelves with ſtones, and were become tumultuous. He therefore went himſelf to the ſpot, attended by a marine, with his muſquet. At their approach the iſlanders threw away their ſtones, and, on Mr. King's application to ſome of the chiefs, the

mob

mob was diſperſed. Every thing being now quiet, Mr. King went to meet Captain Cook, who was then coming on ſhore in the pinnace. He related to him what had recently happened, and received orders to fire a ball at the offenders, if they again behaved inſolently, and began to throw ſtones. In conſequence of theſe directions, Mr. King gave orders to the corporal, that the ſentinels pieces ſhould be loaded with ball, inſtead of ſhot.

On our return to the tents, we heard a continued fire of muſquets from the Diſcovery; which we perceived to be directed at a canoe, which was haſtening towards the ſhore, with one of our ſmall boats in purſuit of it. This firing, we concluded, was the conſequence of ſome theft, and Captain Cook ordered Mr. King to follow him with a marine armed, and to endeavour to ſeize the people as they landed. They accordingly ran to the place, where the canoe was expected to come aſhore, but did not arrive in time; the people having quitted it, and fled into the country before their arrival.

At this time they did not know that the goods had been already reſtored; and thinking it probable, from what they had obſerved, that they might be of importance, they did not chooſe to relinquiſh their endeavours to recover them; and, having inquired of the natives what courſe the people had taken, they purſued them till it was

almoſt

almoſt dark, when they ſuppoſed themſelves to be about three miles from the tents; and, thinking the iſlanders amuſed them with falſe information in their purſuit, they gave up the ſearch and returned.

A difference of a more ſerious nature had happened during their abſence. The officer, who had been diſpatched in the ſmall boat after the thieves, and who was returning on board, with the booty that had been reſtored, ſeeing Captain Cook and Mr. King engaged in the purſuit of the offenders, ſeized a canoe, which was drawn up on the ſhore. This canoe unfortunately belonged to Pareea, who, at that inſtant arriving from on board the Diſcovery, claimed his property, and proteſted his innocence. The officer perſiſted in detaining it, in which he was encouraged by the crew of the pinnace, then waiting for Captain Cook; in conſequence of which a ſcuffle enſued, and Pareea was knocked down by a violent blow on the head, with an oar. Several of the natives, who had hitherto been peaceable ſpectators, began now to attack our people with ſuch a ſhower of ſtones, that they were forced to a precipitate retreat, and ſwam off to a rock, at a conſiderable diſtance from the ſhore. The pinnace was plundered immediately by the natives, and would have been entirely demoliſhed, if Pareea had not interpoſed; who had not only recovered from his blow, but had

alſo forgot it at the ſame inſtant. He ordered the crowd to diſperſe, and beckoned to our people to come and take poſſeſſion of the pinnace; and afterwards aſſured them that he would uſe his influence to get the things reſtored which had been taken out of it. After their departure, he followed them in his canoe, carrying them a midſhipman's cap, and ſome other articles of the plunder; and, expreſſing much concern at what had happened, begged to know if the *orono* would kill him, and whether he might be permitted to come on board the next day? He was aſſured that he would be well received, and therefore joined noſes with the officers (their uſual token of friendſhip) and paddled over to Kowrowa.

Captain Cook, when theſe particulars were repreſented to him, was exceedingly concerned; and, when he and Mr. King were returning on board, he expreſſed his fears that theſe iſlanders would oblige him to purſue violent meaſures; adding, they muſt not be permitted to ſuppoſe, that they have gained an advantage over us. It was then, however, too late to take any ſteps that evening; he therefore only gave orders that every iſlander ſhould be immediately turned out of the ſhip. This order being executed, Mr. King returned on ſhore; and the events of the day having much abated our former confidence in the natives, a double guard was poſted on the *morai*, with orders to let Mr. King know, if any

men

men were ſeen lurking about the beach. At eleven o'clock, five of the natives were ſeen creeping round the bottom of the *morai*; they approached with great caution, and, at laſt, perceiving they were diſcovered, immediately retired out of ſight. About midnight one of them ventured himſelf near the obſervatory, when a ſentinel fired over him; on which they all fled, and we had no farther diſturbance during the remainder of the night.

At day-light the next morning Mr. King went on board the Reſolution, in order to get the time-keeper; and in his way thither was hailed by the Diſcovery, and received information that their cutter, had ſome time in the night been ſtolen, from the buoy, where it had been moored.

On Mr. King's arrival on board, he found the marines were arming themſelves, and Captain Cook buſied in loading his double-barrelled gun. Whilſt he was acquainting him with what had happened in the night at the *morai*, he eagerly interrupted him, and informed him of the loſs of the Diſcovery's cutter, and of the preparations he was making to recover it. It was his uſual practice in all the iſlands of this ocean, when any thing of conſequence had been ſtolen from him, by ſome ſtratagem, to get the king, or ſome of the principal *Erees*, on board; where he detained them as hoſtages, till the property was reſtored. This method having hitherto proved ſucceſsful, he meant

meant to adopt on the preſent occaſion; and gave orders to ſtop every canoe that ſhould attempt to leave the bay; reſolving to ſeize and deſtroy them if the cutter could not be recovered by peaceable means. In purſuance of which, the boats of both ſhips, properly manned and armed, were ſtationed acroſs the bay; and before Mr. King quitted the ſhip, ſome great guns were fired at two canoes, that were attempting to eſcape.

Between ſeven and eight o'clock Captain Cook and Mr. King quitted the ſhip together; the former in the pinnace, with Mr. Phillips, and nine marines; and the latter in the ſmall boat. The laſt orders Mr. King received from Captain Cook were, to quiet the minds of the people, on our ſide of the bay, by the ſtrongeſt aſſurances that they ſhould not be injured; to keep his people together, and to be continually on his guard. Captain Cook and Mr. King then ſeparated; the Captain going towards Kowrowa, where Terreeoboo reſided; and Mr. King proceeded to the beach: his firſt buſineſs, when he arrived on ſhore, was to iſſue ſtrict orders to the marines to continue within the tent, to charge their muſquets with ball, and not on any conſideration, to quit their arms. He then attended old Kaoo and the prieſts at their reſpective huts, and explained to them, as well as he was able, the reaſon of the hoſtile preparations, which had ſo exceedingly alarmed them. He found they were no ſtrangers

to the circumſtance of the cutter's being ſtolen, and aſſured them, that though the Commodore was not only reſolved to recover it, but alſo to puniſh, in the moſt exemplary manner, the authors of the theft; yet that they, and all the inhabitants of the village, on our ſide, had not the leaſt occaſion to be alarmed, or to apprehend the leaſt danger from us. He importuned the prieſts to communicate this to the people, and intreat them not to entertain an idea of fear, but to continue peaceable and quiet. Kaoo interrogated Mr. King, with great emotion, if any harm was to happen to Terreeoboo? He aſſured him there was not; and both he and his brethren appeared much ſatisfied with this aſſurance.

Captain Cook, having in the mean time, called off the launch, from the north point of the bay, and taken it with him, landed at Kowrowa, with the lieutenant and nine marines. He proceeded immediately into the village, where he was reſpectfully received; the people, as uſual, proſtating themſelves before him, and making their accuſtomed offerings of ſmall hogs. Perceiving that his deſign was not ſuſpected, his next ſtep was, to inquire for the king, and the two boys, his ſons, who had been almoſt continually his gueſts on board the Reſolution. The boys preſently returned with the natives, who had been ſearching for them, and immediately conducted Captain Cook to the habitation where Terreeoboo had

had ſlept. The old man had juſt awoke; and after ſome converſation reſpecting the loſs of the cutter, from which the Commodore was convinced that he was not in any wiſe privy to it, he invited him to accompany him, and ſpend the day on board the Reſolution. The king accepted the invitation, and aroſe immediately to accompany him.

Every thing had now a proſperous appearance; the two boys were already in the pinnace, and the reſt of the party approaching the water ſide, when a woman, named Kanee-kabareea, the mother of the boys, and one of Terreeoboo's favourite wives, followed him, beſeeching him, with tears and entreaties, not to venture to go on board. Two chiefs, who came with her, took hold of him, and inſiſting he ſhould proceed no farther, obliged him to ſit down. The iſlanders, now collecting in vaſt numbers along the ſhore, who had probably been alarmed by the diſcharging of the great guns, and the hoſtile appearances in the bay, gathered together round Captain Cook and Terreeoboo. Thus ſituated, the lieutenant of marines, perceiving that his men were huddled together in the crowd, and conſequently unable to uſe their arms, if there ſhould appear to be a neceſſity for it, propoſed to Captain Cook, to draw them up along the rocks, cloſe to the edge of the water. The populace making way for them to paſs, the lieutenant drew them up in a

line; within about thirty yards of the place where Terreeoboo was ſitting.

The old king continued, all this time, on the ground, bearing the moſt viſible marks of terror and dejection in his countenance. Captain Cook, unwilling to abandon the object which occaſioned him to come on ſhore, urged him moſt earneſtly to proceed; whilſt, on the other hand, if the king expreſſed any inclination to follow him, the chiefs, who ſurrounded him, interpoſed; at firſt they had recourſe to prayers and entreaties, but afterwards to force and violence, and even inſiſted on his remaining on ſhore. Captain Cook, at length, perceiving that the alarm had ſpread too generally, and that there was not a probability of getting him off without much bloodſhed, gave up the point; at the ſame time obſerving, to Mr. Phillips, that, to compel him to go on board, would probably occaſion the loſs of many of the lives of the inhabitants.

Notwithſtanding this enterprize had now failed, and was abandoned by Captain Cook, yet it did not appear that his perſon was in the leaſt degree of danger, till an accident happened, which occaſioned a fatal turn to the affair. The boats, ſtationed acroſs the bay, having fired at ſome canoes, for attempting to get out, unfortunately had killed one of their principal chiefs. Intelligence of his death arrived at the village where Captain Cook then was, juſt as he had

parted from the king, and was proceeding with great deliberation towards the ſhore. The ferment it immediately occaſioned, was but too conſpicuous; the women and children were inſtantly ſent away, and the men were ſoon clad in their war-mats, and armed with ſpears and ſtones. One of the natives, having provided himſelf with a ſtone, and a long iron ſpike (called by the natives a *pahooa*) advanced towards the Captain, flouriſhing his weapon in defiance, and threatening to throw the ſtone. The Captain requeſted him to deſiſt; but the iſlander repeating his menaces, he was highly provoked, and fired a load of ſmall ſhot at him. The man was ſhielded in his war-mat, which the ſhot could not penetrate; his firing, therefore, ſerved only to irritate and encourage them. Vollies of ſtones were thrown at the marines; and one of the *erees* attempted the life of Mr. Phillips with his *pahooa*; but, not ſucceeding in the attempt, he received from him a blow with the butt end of his piece. Captain Cook immediately diſcharged his ſecond barrel, loaded with ball, and killed one of the moſt violent of the aſſailants. A general attack with ſtones ſucceeded, which was followed on our part, by a diſcharge of muſquetry, not only from the marines, but alſo from the people in the boats. The natives, to our great aſtoniſhment, received our fire with great firmneſs; and without giving time for the marines to charge again,

they ruſhed in upon them with dreadful ſhouts and yells. What followed was a ſcene of horror and confuſion, which can more eaſily be conceived than properly related *.

Four of the marines retreated among the rocks, and fell a ſacrifice to the fury of the enemy; three others were dangerouſly wounded; and the Lieutenant ſtabbed between the ſhoulders with a *pahooa*; but having fortunately reſerved his fire, ſhot the man from whom he had received the wound, at the inſtant he was preparing to repeat his blow. The laſt time our unfortunate Commodore was diſtinctly ſeen, he was ſtanding at the water's edge, and ordering the boats to ceaſe firing, and pull in.

It was imagined by ſome of thoſe who were preſent, that the marines, and thoſe who were in the boats, fired without Captain Cook's orders, and that he was anxious to prevent the farther effuſion of blood; it is therefore probable, that, on this occaſion, his humanity proved fatal to him: for it was obſerved, that while he faced the natives, no violence had been offered him; but, when he turned about, to give directions to

* Though a view of Karakakooa Bay, by Mr. Webber, has appeared in Captain Cook's Voyages in Quarto, no engraving has there been given of the death of the much-lamented Commander. As ſo intereſting a ſubject will tend to gratify the curioſity of the reader, uncommon diligence has been exerted to procure a maſterly repreſentation of ſo affecting a cataſtrophe.

the boats, he was ſtabbed in the back, and fell with his face into the water. A general ſhout was ſet up by the iſlanders on ſeeing him fall, and his body was dragged inhumanly on ſhore, where he was ſurrounded by the enemy, who ſnatching the dagger from each other's hands, diſplayed a ſavage eagerneſs to join in his deſtruction.

Such was the fate of our moſt excellent Commander! After a life, diſtinguiſhed by ſuch ſucceſsful enterprize, his death can hardly be reckoned premature; ſince he lived to accompliſh the great work for which he ſeemed particularly deſigned; being rather removed from the enjoyment, than the acquiſition of glory. How ſincerely his loſs was lamented, by thoſe who owed their ſecurity to his ſkill and conduct, and every conſolation, to his tenderneſs and humanity, it is impoſſible to deſcribe; and the taſk would be equally difficult to repreſent the horror, dejection, and diſmay, which followed ſo dreadful and unexpected a cataſtrophe. Let us, therefore, turn from ſo calamitous a ſcene, to the pleaſing contemplation of his character and virtues, and pay our laſt juſt tribute to the memory of this worthy man, in a ſhort hiſtory of his life, and public ſervices.

Captain James Cook was born in the year 1727, near Whitby, in Yorkſhire; and, at an early age, commenced an apprenticeſhip to a ſhopkeeper in a neighbouring village. This not be-

ing ſuitable to his natural propenſity, he ſoon quitted the counter, and contracted, for nine years, with the maſter of a veſſel in the coal trade. In 1755, at the commencement of the war, he entered into the king's ſervice on board the Eagle, then commanded by Captain Hamer, and afterwards by Sir Hugh Palliſer, who perceiving his merit, advanced him to the quarter deck.

In 1758, we find him maſter of the Northumberland, Lord Colville's flag ſhip, who then commanded the ſquadron ſtationed on the coaſt of America. Here, as he has frequently declared, he firſt read Euclid, and cloſely applied himſelf to the ſtudy of the mathematics, with the aſſiſtance of only a few books, and his own induſtry. While he thus found means to cultivate his underſtanding, and ſupply, in ſome degree, the deficiencies of an early education, he was engaged in moſt of the active ſcenes of war in America. At the ſiege of Quebec, he was intruſted by Sir Charles Saunders with the execution of important ſervices, in the naval department. He was the pilot who conducted the boats to the attack of Montmorency; managed the embarkation to the heights of Abraham; and pointed out, by buoys, how the large ſhips might proceed with ſecurity up the river. The manner in which he acquitted himſelf in theſe important ſervices, procured him the eſteem and friendſhip of Sir Charles Saunders

and

and Lord Colville, who continued his zealous patrons during the remainder of their lives. At the concluſion of the war, he was appointed, through the intereſt of Lord Colville and Sir Hugh Palliſer, to make a ſurvey of the Gulf of St. Lawrence, and the coaſts of Newfoundland. He was thus employed till the year 1767, when Sir Edward Hawke appointed him to the command of an expedition to the South Seas; in order to make an obſervation of the tranſit of *Venus*, and to proſecute diſcoveries in that part of the globe.

His ſervices, ſince this period, are too generally known to require enumeration. His reputation has proportionably advanced beyond the effect of panegyric. He ſeems, indeed, to have been peculiarly qualified for this ſpecies of enterprize. His natural inclination, the nature of his ſervices, and indefatigable application, all conſpired to compleat him for it; ſo that he acquired ſuch a degree of profeſſional knowledge, as can fall to the lot of very few.

His frame and conſtitution were robuſt, and ſuch as enabled him to undergo the ſevereſt hardſhips. When neceſſity required it, he could feed, with ſatisfaction, upon the coarſeſt and moſt ungrateful food; and he ſubmitted to every kind of ſelf-denial with the greateſt compoſure and indifference. Nor were the qualities of his mind leſs vigorous than thoſe of his body. His underſtanding

ing was ſtrong and perſpicacious: his judgment, eſpecially in thoſe matters in which he was more particularly engaged, quick and ſure. His deſigns and operations, were the natural reſult of a great original genius. His valour was cool, deliberate, and determined; accompanied with a moſt aſtoniſhing preſence of mind on the approach of danger. His manners were plain, eaſy, and unaffected. His temper, it muſt be admitted, was too much ſubject to haſtineſs and paſſion; but this ſhould be forgotten, when it is conſidered, that his diſpoſition was the moſt benevolent and humane.

Theſe are a few traits or outlines of the character of Captain Cook; but its diſtinguiſhing feature was, the moſt unremitting perſeverance to accompliſh his deſign, in oppoſition to dangers, difficulties, and hardſhips. During all his long and tedious voyages, his eagerneſs and activity were never in the leaſt abated. No alluring incitement could detain him for a moment; even thoſe intervals of recreation, which unavoidably occurred in the courſe of our ſervices, and were joyfully embraced by many of his officers, were ſubmitted to by him with impatience, if they could not be made ſubſervient to the more effectual proſecution of his deſigns.

It would be unneceſſary to recapitulate the inſtances in which theſe qualities were diſplayed. The reſult of his ſervices, however, we ſhall juſt touch

touch upon, under two principal heads, viz. geography and navigation, placing each in a ſeparate and diſtinct point of view.

No ſcience, it is preſumed, has ever received greater additions from the labours of one man, than geography has done from thoſe of Captain Cook. In his firſt voyage, he diſcovered the Society Iſlands; aſcertained the inſularity of New Zealand; and diſcovered the ſtraits which ſeparate the two iſlands, and are called after his name. He explored the eaſtern coaſt of New Holland, till then unknown; an extent of twenty-ſeven degrees of latitude, and upwards of two thouſand miles.

He gave, in his ſecond expedition, a reſolution to the great problem of a ſouthern continent; having ſo completely traverſed that hemiſphere, as not to leave a poſſibility of its exiſtence, unleſs it is ſo near the pole, as to be beyond the reach of navigation. New Caledonia, the largeſt iſland in the Southern Pacific, except New Zealand, was diſcovered in this voyage. Alſo the iſland of Georgia; and an unknown coaſt, which the Captain named Sandwich land; and having twice viſited the tropical ſeas, he ſettled the ſituations of the old, and made ſeveral new diſcoveries.

His third and laſt voyage, however, is diſtinguiſhed above the reſt, by the extent and importance of its diſcoveries. Not to mention the

ſeveral

ſeveral ſmaller iſlands in the Southern Pacific, he diſcovered the group, called the Sandwich Iſlands; which, on account of their ſituation and productions, may perhaps become an object of more conſequence, than any other diſcovery in the South Sea. He explored what had before remained unknown of the weſtern coaſt of America, an extent of three thouſand ſeven hundred miles; aſcertained the proximity of the two continents of Aſia and America; ſailed through the ſtraits between them, and ſurveyed the coaſts on each ſide, ſo far as to be ſatisfied of the impracticability of a paſſage in that hemiſphere, from the Atlantic into the Pacific Ocean, by an eaſtern or a weſtern courſe. He has, in ſhort, compleated the hydrography of the habitable globe, if we except the Japaneſe Archipelago, and the ſea of Amur, which are ſtill imperfectly known by Europeans.

His ſervices, as a navigator, are not leſs important and meritorious. The method which he invented, and ſo ſucceſsfully put in practice, of preſerving the health (and conſequently the lives) of ſeamen, will tranſmit his name to future ages, as a friend and benefactor of mankind.

It is well known among thoſe who are converſant in naval hiſtory, that the advantages which have been ſought, through the medium of long ſea-voyages, have always been purchaſed at a dear rate. That dreadful diſorder which is peculiar

peculiar to this ſervice, muſt, without exerciſing an unwarrantable degree of tyranny over our ſeamen, have been an inſuperable obſtacle to our enterprizes. It was reſerved for Captain Cook to convince the world, that voyages might be protracted to three or even four years, in unknown regions, and under every change of climate, without affecting the health in the ſmalleſt degree, and even without diminiſhing the probability of life. His method has been fully explained, in a paper which was read before the Royal Society, in 1776 *.

Reſpecting his profeſſional abilities, they muſt be ſubmitted to the judgment of thoſe who are acquainted with the ſervices in which he was engaged. They cannot but acknowledge, that to have conducted three ſuch dangerous and difficult expeditions, of ſo unuſual a length, with invariable ſucceſs, muſt not only have required an accurate knowledge of his buſineſs, but alſo a moſt powerful and comprehenſive genius.

Having thus given a faithful, though a conciſe account of the death of our much lamented Commander, and alſo of his character and ſervices, his memory muſt now be left to the gratitude and admiration of poſterity.

* Sir Godfrey Copley's gold medal was awarded him, on that occaſion.

CHAP.

## CHAP. IV.

*Tranſactions at Owhyhee, ſubſequent to the Death of Captain Cook—Bravery of Mr. Phillips—The Iſlanders forced to retire—Situation of our Party at the Morai—The Natives annoy them with Stones—Attempt to ſtorm the Morai—A ſhort Truce—Our People quit the Morai—Pacific Meaſures determined on—Mr. King ſent to obtain a Conference with ſome of the Chiefs—His Interview with Koah—Contemptuous Behaviour of the Natives—Precautions taken by us—Two of the Iſlanders, in a Canoe, fired at, but not hurt—A Piece of Captain Cook's Fleſh brought us by one of them—Further Provocations from the Natives—Some great Guns fired at them—Our Watering Party harraſſed with Stones—The Village of Kakooa burned by our People—Bravery of one of the Natives—A Proceſſion, headed by Kaireekeea, who comes on board the Reſolution—The Bones of Captain Cook brought to us—They are committed to the Deep—The Ships leave Karakakooa Bay.*

WE have before obſerved that four of the marines, who accompanied Captain Cook, were killed by the natives on the ſpot. The others, with their lieutenant, Mr. Phillips, threw themſelves into the ſea, and made their eſcape, being protected by a ſmart fire from the boats.

On

On this occaſion, a ſtriking inſtance of gallant behaviour, and of affection for his men, was diſplayed by Mr. Phillips; for he had ſcarcely got into the boat, when, ſeeing one of the marines, who was not a very expert ſwimmer, ſtruggling in the water, and in danger of being taken by the iſlanders, he inſtantly leaped into the ſea to his aſſiſtance, though conſiderably wounded himſelf; and after receiving a blow on his head from a ſtone, which had almoſt ſent him to the bottom, he caught the marine by the hair, and brought him off in ſafety. Our people for ſome time kept up a conſtant fire from the boats (which, during the whole tranſaction, were at no greater diſtance from the land than twenty yards), in order to efford their unfortunate companions, if any of them ſhould ſtill remain alive, an opportunity of affecting their eſcape. Theſe continued efforts, ſeconded by a few guns, that were, at the ſame time, fired from the Reſolution, having at length compelled the enemy to retire, a ſmall boat, manned by five midſhipmen, pulled towards the ſhore, where they perceived the bodies lying on the ground, without any ſigns of life. However, they judged it dangerous to attempt to bring them off with ſo inconſiderable a force; and their ammunition being nearly conſumed, they returned to the ſhips, leaving the bodies in poſſeſſion of the natives, together with ten ſtands of arms.

When

When the general conſternation, which the news of this misfortune had diffuſed throughout the whole company of both ſhips, had in ſome degree ſubſided, their attention was called to the party at the *morai*, where the maſt and ſails were on ſhore, guarded by only ſix marines. It is difficult to deſcribe the emotions that agitated the minds of Mr. King and his attendants, at this ſtation, during the time in which theſe occurrences had happened, at the other ſide of the bay. Being at the diſtance only of a mile from the village of Kowrowa, they could diſtinctly perceive a vaſt multitude of people collected on the ſpot where Captain Cook had juſt before landed. They heard the firing of the muſquets, and obſerved an uncommon buſtle and agitation among the crowd. They afterwards ſaw the iſlanders retreating, the boats retiring from the ſhore, and paſſing and repaſſing, with great ſtillneſs, between the ſhips. Mr. King's heart ſoon miſgave him on this occaſion. Where ſo valuable a life was concerned, he could not avoid being alarmed by ſuch new and threatening appearances. Beſides this, he knew that Captain Cook, from a long ſeries of ſucceſs, in his tranſactions with the natives of this ocean, had acquired a degree of confidence, which might, in ſome ill-fated moment, put him too much off his guard; and Mr. King now ſaw all the dangers to which that confidence might lead, without deriving much conſolation

ſolation from the conſideration of the experience which had given riſe to it. His firſt care, on hearing the report of the muſquets, was to aſſure the iſlanders, conſiderable numbers of whom were aſſembled round the wall of our conſecrated field, and ſeemed at a loſs how to account for what they had heard and ſeen, that they ſhould meet with no moleſtation; and that, at all events, he was inclined to continue on peaceable terms with them.

Mr. King and his attendants remained in this ſituation, till the boats had returned on board, when Captain Clerke perceiving, by means of his teleſcope, that our party was ſurrounded by the natives, who, he thought, deſigned to attack them, ordered two four-pounders to be fired at the iſlanders. Theſe guns, though well aimed, did no miſchief; but they gave the natives a convincing proof of their powerful effects. A cocoa-nut-tree, under which ſome of them were ſitting, was broken in the middle by one of the balls; and the other ſhivered a rock, which ſtood in an exact line with them. As Mr. King had, juſt before, given them the ſtrongeſt aſſurances of their ſafety, he was extremely mortified at this act of hoſtility, and, to prevent its being repeated, inſtantly diſpatched a boat to inform Captain Clerke, that he was, at preſent, on the moſt amicable terms with the iſlanders, and that, if any future occaſion ſhould ariſe for changing his conduct towards them, he would hoiſt a jack, as

a ſignal for Captain Clerke to afford him his aſſiſtance.

Mr. King waited the return of the boat with the greateſt impatience; and after remaining for the ſpace of a quarter of an hour, under the utmoſt anxiety and ſuſpence, his fears were at length confirmed, by the arrival of Mr. Bligh, with orders to ſtrike the tents immediately, and to ſend on board the ſails, that were repairing. At the ſame inſtant, Kaireekeea having alſo received information of the death of Captain Cook, from a native who had arrived from the other ſide of the bay, approached Mr. King, with great dejection and ſorrow in his countenance, inquiring whether it was true.

The ſituation of the party, at this time, was highly critical and important. Not only their own lives, but the iſſue of the expedition, and the return of at leaſt one of the ſhips, were involved in the ſame common danger. They had the maſt of the Reſolution, and the greater part of the ſails, on ſhore, protected by only half a dozen marines. The loſs of theſe would have been irreparable; and though the iſlanders had not as yet teſtified the ſmalleſt diſpoſition to moleſt the party, it was difficult to anſwer for the alteration, which the intelligence of the tranſaction at Kowrowa might produce. Mr. King therefore thought proper to diſſemble his belief of the death of Captain Cook, and to deſire

Kaireekeea

Kaireekeea to diſcourage the report; apprehending that either the fear of our reſentment, or the ſucceſsful example of their countrymen, might perhaps lead them to ſeize the favourable opportunity, which at this time preſented itſelf, of giving us a ſecond blow. He, at the ſame time, adviſed him to bring old Kaoo, and the other prieſts, into a large houſe adjoining to the *morai*, partly from a regard to their ſafety, in caſe it ſhould have been found neceſſary to have recourſe to violent meaſures; and partly from a deſire of having him near our people, in order to make uſe of his authority with the natives, if it could be inſtrumental in maintaining peace.

Mr. King having ſtationed the marines on the top of the *morai*, which formed a ſtrong and advantageous poſt, intruſted the command to Mr. Bligh, who received the moſt poſitive directions to act ſolely on the defenſive, went on board the Diſcovery, in order to confer with Captain Clerke on the dangerous ſituation of our affairs. He had no ſooner left the ſpot, than the iſlanders began to annoy our people with ſtones; and juſt after he had reached the ſhip, he heard the firing of the marines. He therefore haſtily returned on ſhore, where he found affairs growing every moment more alarming. The natives were providing arms, and putting on their mats; and their numbers augmented very faſt. He alſo obſerved ſeveral large bodies advancing towards our party

along the cliff, by which the village of Kakooa is ſeparated from the north ſide of the bay, where Kowrowa is ſituate.

They at firſt attacked our people with ſtones from behind the walls of their incloſures, and meeting with no reſiſtance, they ſoon became more daring. A few courageous fellows, having crept along the beach, under cover of the rocks, ſuddenly preſented themſelves at the foot of the *morai*, with an intention of ſtorming it on the ſide next the ſea, which was its only acceſſible part; and they were not diſlodged before they had ſtood a conſiderable quantity of ſhot, and had ſeen one of their number fall.

The courage of one of theſe aſſailants deſerves to be recorded. Having returned with a view of carrying off his companion, amidſt the fire of our whole party, he received a wound, which obliged him to quit the body, and retire; but, a few minutes afterwards, he again made his appearance, and receiving another wound, was under the neceſſity of retreating a ſecond time. At that moment Mr. King arrived at the *morai*, and ſaw this man return a third time, faint from the loſs of blood and fatigue. Being informed of what had happened, he forbad the ſoldiers to fire; and the iſlander was ſuffered to carry off his friend, which he was juſt able to accompliſh; and then fell down himſelf, and breathed his laſt.

A ſtrong

A ſtrong reinforcement from both ſhips having landed about this time, the natives retreated behind their walls; which affording Mr. King acceſs to the prieſts, he ſent one of them to exert his endeavours to bring his countrymen to ſome terms, and to propoſe to them, that if they would deſiſt from throwing ſtones, he would not allow our men to fire. This truce was agreed to, and our people were ſuffered to launch the maſt, and carry off the ſails, aſtronomical inſtruments, &c. without moleſtation. As ſoon as our party had quitted the *morai*, the iſlanders took poſſeſſion of it, and ſome of them threw a few ſtones, which, however, did no miſchief.

Between eleven and twelve o'clock, Mr. King arrived on board the Diſcovery, where he found that no deciſive plan had been adopted for the regulation of our future proceedings. The recovery of Captain Cook's body, and the reſtitution of the boat, were the objects, which, on all hands, we agreed to inſiſt on; and Mr. King declared it as his opinion, that ſome vigorous methods ſhould be put in execution, if the demand of them ſhould not be inſtantly complied with.

Though it may juſtly be ſuppoſed that Mr. King's feelings, on the death of a beloved and reſpected friend, had ſome ſhare in this opinion, yet there were doubtleſs other reaſons, and thoſe of the moſt ſerious nature, that had ſome weight with him. The confidence which the ſucceſs or

the natives in killing our Commander, and obliging us to leave the ſhore, muſt naturally have inſpired; and the advantage, however inconſiderable, which they had gained over us the preceding day, would, he had no doubt, excite them to make farther dangerous attempts; and the more particularly, as they had no great reaſon, from what they had hitherto obſerved, to dread the effects of our fire-arms. This kind of weapon, indeed, contrary to the expectations of us all, had produced in them no ſigns of terror. On our ſide, ſuch was the condition of our veſſels, and the ſtate of diſcipline among us, that, had a vigorous attack been made on us, during the night, the conſequences might perhaps have been highly diſagreeable. Mr. King was ſupported, in theſe apprehenſions, by the opinion of the greater part of the officers on board; and nothing ſeemed to him more likely to encourage the iſlanders to make the attempt, than the appearance of our being inclined to an accommodation, which they could only impute to weakneſs, or fear.

On the other hand it was urged, in favour of more conciliatory meaſures, that the miſchief was already done, and was irreparable; that the natives, by reaſon of their former friendſhip and kindneſs, had a ſtrong claim to our regard; and the more particularly, as the late calamitous accident did not appear to have taken its riſe from

any

any premeditated deſign; that, on the part of Terreeoboo, his ignorance of the theft, his willingneſs to accompany Captain Cook on board the Reſolution, and his having actually ſent his two ſons into the pinnace, muſt reſcue his character, in this reſpect, from the ſmalleſt degree of ſuſpicion; that the behaviour of his women, and the chiefs, might eaſily be accounted for, from the apprehenſions occaſioned in their minds by the armed force, with which Captain Cook landed, and the hoſtile preparations in the bay; appearances ſo unſuitable to the confidence and friendſhip, in which both parties had hitherto lived, that the arming of the iſlanders was manifeſtly with a deſign to reſiſt the attempt, which they had ſome reaſon to expect would be made, to carry off their ſovereign by force, and was naturally to be expected from a people who had a remarkable affection for their chiefs.

To theſe dictates of humanity, other motives of a prudential kind were added; that we were in want of a ſupply of water, and other refreſhments; that the Reſolution's foremaſt would require ſeven or eight days work, before it could be ſtepped; that the ſpring was advancing very faſt; and that the ſpeedy proſecution of our next expedition to the northward, ought now to be our ſole object; and that, therefore, to engage in a vindictive conteſt with the natives, might not only ſubject us to the imputation of needleſs

cruelty, but would require great delay in the equipment of our ſhips.

Captain Clerke concurred in this latter opinion; and though Mr. King was convinced, that an early and vigorous diſplay of our reſentment would have more effectually anſwered every object both of prudence and humanity, he was, upon the whole, not ſorry, that the meaſures he had recommended were rejected. For though the contemptuous behaviour of the iſlanders, and their ſubſequent oppoſition to our neceſſary occupations on ſhore, ariſing, moſt probably, from a miſconſtruction of our lenity, obliged us at laſt to have recourſe to violence in our own defence; yet he was not certain, that the circumſtances of the caſe would, in the opinion of the generality of people, have juſtified the uſe of force, on our part, in the firſt inſtance. Cautionary ſeverity is ever invidious, and the rigour of a preventive meaſure, when it is the moſt ſucceſsful, leaves its expediency the leaſt apparent.

While we were thus engaged, in concerting ſome plan for our future operations, a very numerous concourſe of the natives ſtill kept poſſeſſion of the ſhore; and ſome of them, coming off in canoes, approached within piſtol-ſhot of the ſhips, and inſulted us by various marks of defiance and contempt. It was extremely difficult to reſtrain the ſeamen from the uſe of their arms on theſe occaſions; but, as pacific meaſures had been re-

ſolved

ſolved on, the canoes were allowed to return unmoleſted.

Mr. King was now ordered to proceed towards the ſhore, with the boats of both ſhips, well manned and armed, with a view of bringing the iſlanders to a parley, and of obtaining, if poſſible, a conference with ſome of the *Erees*. If he ſhould ſucceed in this attempt, he was to demand the dead bodies, and particularly that of Captain Cook; to threaten them, in caſe of a refuſal, with our reſentment; but, by no means to fire, unleſs attacked; and not to go aſhore on any account whatever. Theſe inſtructions were delivered to Mr. King before the whole party, in the moſt poſitive manner.

Mr. King and his detachment left the ſhips about four o'clock in the afternoon; and, as they approached the ſhore, they perceived every indication of a hoſtile reception. The natives were all in motion; the women and children retiring; the men arming themſelves with long ſpears and daggers, and putting on their war-mats. It alſo appeared, that, ſince the morning, they had thrown up breaſt-works of ſtone along the beach, where Captain Cook had landed; in expectation, perhaps, of an attack at that place.

As ſoon as our party were within reach, the iſlanders began to throw ſtones at them with ſlings, but without doing any miſchief. Mr. King concluded, from theſe appearances, that all attempts

attempts to bring them to a parley would be ineffectual, unleſs he gave them ſome ground for mutual confidence: he therefore ordered the armed boats to ſtop, and advanced alone, in the ſmall boat, holding in his hand a white flag; the meaning of which, from an univerſal ſhout of joy from the natives, he had the ſatisfaction to find was immediately underſtood. The women inſtantly returned from the ſide of the hill, whither they had retired; the men threw off their mats, and all ſeated themſelves together by the ſea-ſide, extending their arms, and inviting Mr. King to land.

Though ſuch behaviour ſeemed expreſſive of a friendly diſpoſition, he could not avoid entertaining ſuſpicions of its ſincerity. But when he ſaw Koah, with extraordinary boldneſs and aſſurance, ſwimming off towards the boat, with a white flag in his hand, he thought proper to return this mark of confidence, and accordingly received him into the boat, though he was armed; a circumſtance which did not contribute to leſſen Mr. King's ſuſpicions. He had, indeed, long harboured an unfavourable opinion of Koah. The prieſts had always repreſented him as a perſon of a malicious temper, and no friend to us; and the repeated detections of his fraud and treachery, had convinced us of the truth of their aſſertions. Beſides, the melancholy tranſactions of the morning, in which he was ſeen performing a principal part,

part, inſpired Mr. King with the utmoſt horror at finding himſelf ſo near him; and as he approached him, with feigned tears, and embraced him, Mr. King was ſo diſtruſtful of his intentions, that he took hold of the point of the *paboua*, which the chief held in his hand, and turned it from him. He informed the iſlander, that he had come to demand the body of Captain Cook, and to declare war againſt the natives, unleſs it was reſtored without delay. Koah aſſured him that this ſhould be done as ſoon as poſſible, and that he would go himſelf for that purpoſe; and after requeſting a piece of iron of Mr. King, with marks of great aſſurance, he leaped into the water, and ſwam aſhore, calling out to his countrymen, that we were all friends again.

Our people waited with great anxiety, near an hour, for his return. During this interval, the other boats had approached ſo near the ſhore, that the men who were in them entered into converſation with a party of the iſlanders, at a little diſtance; by whom they were informed, that the Captain's body had been cut to pieces, and carried up the country; but of this circumſtance, Mr. King was not apprized till his return to the ſhips.

Mr. King now began to expreſs ſome degree of impatience at Koah's delay; upon which the chiefs preſſed him exceedingly to land; aſſuring him, that, if he would go in perſon to Terreeoboo, the body would be undoubtedly reſtored to

him. When they found they could not prevail on Mr. King to go aſhore, they endeavoured, on pretence of converſing with him with greater eaſe, to decoy his boat among ſome rocks, where they might have had it in their power to ſeparate him from the other boats. It was eaſy to ſee through theſe artifices, and he was, therefore, very deſirous of breaking off all communication with them, when a chief approached, who had particularly attached himſelf to Captain Clerke, and the officers of the Diſcovery, on board which ſhip he had ſailed, when we laſt quitted the bay, intending to take his paſſage to the iſland of Mowee. He ſaid he came from Terreeoboo, to acquaint our people, that the body was carried up the country, but that it ſhould be brought back the following morning. There appeared much ſincerity in his manner; and being aſked, if he uttered a falſehood, he hooked together his two fore fingers, which is here underſtood as the ſign of veracity, in the uſe of which theſe iſlanders are very ſcrupulous.

Mr. King being now at a loſs how to proceed, ſent Mr. Vancouver to inform Captain Clerke of all that had paſſed; that it was his opinion, the natives did not intend to keep their word with us; and, far from being grieved at what had happened, were, on the contrary, inſpired with great confidence on account of their late ſucceſs, and ſought only to gain time, till they could plan ſome

ſcheme

ſcheme for getting our people into their power. Mr. Vancouver came back with orders for Mr. King to return on board, after giving the iſlanders to underſtand, that, if the body was not reſtored the next morning, the town ſhould be deſtroyed.

When they perceived our party retiring, they endeavoured to provoke them by the moſt contemptuous and inſulting geſtures. Several of our people ſaid, they could diſtinguiſh ſome of the natives parading about in the cloaths which had belonged to our unhappy countrymen, and among them, an *Eree* brandiſhing Captain Cook's hanger, and a woman holding the ſcabbard.

In conſequence of Mr. King's report to Captain Clerke, of what he ſuppoſed to be the preſent temper and diſpoſition of the inhabitants, the moſt effectual methods were taken to guard againſt any attack they might make during the night. The boats were moored with top-chains; additional ſentinels were ſtationed in each of our ſhips; and guard-boats were directed to row round them, in order to prevent the iſlanders from cutting the cables.

In the night, we ſaw a vaſt number of lights on the hills, which induced ſome of us to imagine, that they were removing their effects farther up into the country, in conſequence of our menaces. But it ſeems more probable, that they were kindled at the ſacrifices that were performing on account of the war, in which they ſuppoſed

themſelves likely to be engaged; and, perhaps, the bodies of our ſlain countrymen were, at that time, burning. We afterwards obſerved fires of the ſame kind, as we paſſed the iſland of Morotoi; and which, according to the information we received from ſome of the natives then on board, were made on account of a war they had declared againſt a neighbouring iſland. This agrees with what we learned among the Friendly and Society Iſles, that, previous to any hoſtile expedition, the chiefs always endeavoured to animate the courage of the people, by feaſts and rejoicings in the night.

We paſſed the night without any diſturbance, except from the howlings and lamentations which were heard on ſhore. Early the next morning, (Monday the 15th) Koah came along-ſide the Reſolution, with a ſmall pig, and ſome cloth, which he deſired permiſſion to preſent to Mr. King. We have already mentioned, that this officer was ſuppoſed, by the iſlanders, to be the ſon of Captain Cook; and as the latter had always ſuffered them to believe it, Mr. King was probably conſidered as the chief after his death. As ſoon as he came on deck, he interrogated Koah with regard to the body; and, on his returning evaſive anſwers, refuſed to accept his preſents; and was on the point of diſmiſſing him with expreſſions of anger and reſentment, had not Captain Clerke, with a view of keeping up the

the appearance of friendſhip, judged it more proper, that he ſhould be treated with the cuſtomary reſpect.

This chief came frequently to us, in the courſe of the morning, with ſome trifling preſent or other; and as we always obſerved him eyeing every part of the ſhip with a great degree of attention, we took care he ſhould ſee we were well prepared for our defence.

He was extremely urgent both with Captain Clerke and Mr. King, to go on ſhore, imputing the detention of the bodies to the other chiefs; and aſſuring thoſe gentlemen, that every thing might be adjuſted to their ſatisfaction, by a perſonal interview with the king. However, they did not think it prudent to comply with Koah's requeſt; and, indeed, a fact came afterwards to their knowledge, which proved his want of veracity. For, they were informed, that, immediately after the action in which Captain Cook had loſt his life, Terreeoboo had retired to a cave in the ſteep part of the mountain, that hangs over the bay, which was acceſſible only by means of ropes, and where he continued for ſeveral days, having his proviſions let down to him by cords.

After the departure of Koah from the ſhips, we obſerved that his countrymen, who had aſſembled by day-break, in vaſt crowds on the ſhore, flocked around him with great eagerneſs on his landing, as if they wiſhed to learn the intelligence

telligence he had gained, and what ſteps were to be taken in conſequence of it. It is highly probable, that they expected we ſhould attempt to put our threats in execution; and they appeared fully determined to ſtand their ground. During the whole morning, we heard conchs blowing in various parts of the coaſt; large parties were perceived marching over the hills; and, upon the whole, appearances were ſo alarming, that we carried out a ſtream anchor, for the purpoſe of hauling the ſhip abreaſt of the town, in caſe of an attack; and boats were ſtationed off the northern point of the bay, in order to prevent a ſurprize from the natives in that quarter.

The warlike poſture in which they appeared at preſent, and the breach of their engagement to reſtore the bodies of the ſlain, occaſioned freſh debates among us, concerning the meaſures which ſhould now be purſued. It was at length determined, that nothing ſhould be permitted to interfere with the repair of the Reſolution's maſt, and the preparations for our departure; but that we ſhould, nevertheleſs, continue our negociations for the reſtoration of the bodies of our countrymen.

The greater part of the day was employed in getting the fore-maſt into a proper ſituation on deck, that the carpenters might work upon it; and alſo in making the requiſite alterations in the commiſſions of the officers. The chief command

of

of the expedition having devolved on Captain Clerke, he removed on board the Reſolution, promoted Lieutenant Gore to the rank of Captain of the Diſcovery, appointed Meſſrs. King and Williamſon firſt and ſecond Lieutenants of the Reſolution, and nominated Mr. Harvey, a Midſhipman, who had accompanied Captain Cook during his two laſt voyages, to fill the vacant lieutenancy. During the whole day, we ſuſtained no interruption from the iſlanders; and, in the evening, the launch was moored with a top-chain, and guard-boats ſtationed round each of the ſhips as before.

About eight o'clock, it being exceedingly dark, we heard a canoe paddling towards the ſhip; and it was no ſooner perceived, than both the ſentinels on deck fired into it. There were two of the natives in this canoe, who immediately roared out "*Tinnee*," (which was their method of pronouncing Mr. King's name), and ſaid they were friends, and had ſomething with them which belonged to Captain Cook. When they came on board, they threw themſelves at the feet of our officers, and ſeemed to be extremely terrified. It fortunately happened, that neither of them was hurt, notwithſtanding the balls of both pieces had gone through the canoe.

One of them was the perſon, who has been already mentioned, under the appellation of the *taboo* man, who conſtantly attended Captain Cook

with the particular ceremonies we have before deſcribed; and who, though a man of diſtinction in the iſland, could ſcarcely be prevented from performing for him the moſt humiliating offices of a menial ſervant. After bewailing, with many tears, the loſs of the *Orono*, he informed us, that he had brought a part of his body. He then gave us a ſmall bundle which he brought under his arm; and it is impoſſible to deſcribe the horror with which we were ſeized, upon finding in it, a piece of human fleſh, of the weight of about nine or ten pounds. This, he ſaid, was all that now remained of the body; that the reſt had been cut in pieces, and burnt; but that the head, and all the bones, except thoſe which belonged to the trunk, were in the poſſeſſion of Terreeoboo and the other chiefs; that what we ſaw had been allotted to Kaoo, the chief of the prieſts, for the purpoſe of being uſed in ſome religious ceremony; and that he had ſent it as a teſtimony of his innocence, and of his attachment to us.

We had now an opportunity of learning whether they were cannibals; and we did not neglect to avail ourſelves of it. We firſt endeavoured, by ſeveral indirect queſtions, put to each of them apart, to gain information reſpecting the manner in which the other bodies had been treated and diſpoſed of; and, finding them very conſtant in one account, that, after the fleſh had been cut off, the whole of it was burnt; we at laſt put the

direct queſtion, whether they had not fed on ſome of it? they immediately teſtified as much horror at ſuch an idea, as any European would have done; and aſked, whether that was the practice among us. They afterwards aſked us, with great earneſtneſs, and with an appearance of apprehenſion, when the *Orono* would come again? and how he would treat them on his return? the ſame inquiry was often made in the ſequel by others; and this idea is conſiſtent with the general tenour of their conduct towards him, which indicated, that they conſidered him as a being of a ſuperior ſpecies.

Though we preſſed our two friendly viſitants to continue on board till the next morning, we could not prevail upon them. They informed us, that, if this tranſaction ſhould come to the knowledge of the king, or any of the other *Erees*, it might be attended with the moſt fatal conſequences to their whole ſociety; to prevent which, they had been under the neceſſity of coming to us in the dark; and the ſame precaution, they ſaid, would be requiſite in returning on ſhore. They further told us, that the chiefs were eager to take revenge on us for the death of their countrymen; and particularly cautioned us againſt truſting Koah, who, they aſſured us, was our implacable enemy; and ardently longed for an opportunity of fighting us, to which the blowing

of the conchs, that we had heard in the morning, was intended as a challenge.

It alſo appeared from the information of theſe men, that ſeventeen of their countrymen were ſlain, in the firſt action, at the village of Kowrowa, five of whom were chiefs; and that Kaneena and his brother, our particular friends, were of that number. Eight, they ſaid, had loſt their lives at the obſervatory; three of whom likewiſe were perſons of the firſt diſtinction.

The two natives left us about eleven o'clock, and took the precaution to deſire, that one of our guard-boats might attend them, till they had paſſed the Diſcovery, leſt they ſhould again be fired upon, which, by alarming their countrymen on ſhore, might expoſe them to the danger of detection. This requeſt was readily complied with, and we had the ſatisfaction to find, that they reached the land ſafe and undiſcovered.

We heard, during the remainder of this night, the ſame loud lamentations, as in the preceding one. Early the following morning, we received a viſit from Koah. Mr. King was piqued at finding, that, notwithſtanding the moſt glaring marks of treachery in his conduct, and the poſitive declaration of our friends the prieſts, he ſhould ſtill be ſuffered to carry on the ſame farce, and to make us at leaſt appear the dupes of his hypocriſy. Our ſituation was, indeed, become extremely aukward and unpromiſing; none of the

purpoſes for which this pacific plan of proceedings had been adopted, having hitherto been, in any reſpect, promoted by it. No ſatisfactory anſwer had been given to our demands; we did not ſeem to have made any progreſs towards a reconciliation with the natives; they ſtill remained on the ſhore in hoſtile poſtures, as if determined to oppoſe any endeavours we might make to go aſhore; and yet it was become abſolutely neceſſary to attempt landing, as the completing our ſtock of water would not admit of any longer delay.

We muſt remark, however, in juſtice to the conduct of Captain Clerke, that it was highly probable, from the great numbers of the iſlanders, and from the reſolution with which they ſeemed to expect our approach, that an attack could not have been made without danger; and that the loſs of even a very few men, might have been ſeverely felt by us, during the remainder of our voyage; whereas the delaying to put our menaces into execution, though, on the one hand, it diminiſhed their opinion of our valour, had the effect of occaſioning them to diſperſe on the other. For this day, about twelve o'clock, upon finding that we perſiſted in our inactivity, great bodies of them, after blowing their conchs, and uſing every method of defiance, marched off, over the hills, and never made their appearance afterwards. Thoſe, however, who remained, were not the

leſs daring and preſumptuous. One of them had the inſolence to come within muſquet-ſhot, a-head of the Reſolution, and, after throwing ſeveral ſtones at us, waved over his head the hat which had belonged to Captain Cook, while his countrymen a-ſhore were exulting and encouraging his audacity.

Our people were highly enraged at this inſult, and coming in a body on the quarter deck, begged they might no longer be obliged to put up with ſuch reiterated provocations, and requeſted Mr. King to endeavour to obtain permiſſion for them, from Captain Clerke, to take advantage of the firſt fair occaſion of avenging the death of their much-lamented Commander. On Mr. King's acquainting the Captain with what was paſſing, he ordered ſome great guns to be fired at the iſlanders on ſhore; and promiſed the crew, that, if they ſhould be moleſted at the watering-place, the next day, they ſhould then be permitted to chaſtiſe them.

Before we could bring our guns to bear, the natives had ſuſpected our intentions, from the buſtle and agitation they obſerved in the ſhip; and had retired behind their houſes and walls. We were conſequently obliged to fire, in ſome degree, at random; notwithſtanding which, our ſhot produced all the effects we could deſire. For, in a ſhort time afterwards, we perceived Koah paddling towards us, with the greateſt haſte;

and

and when he arrived, we learned, that ſome people had loſt their lives, and among the reſt Maiha-maiha, a principal *Eree* *, nearly related to Terreeoboo.

Not long after Koah's arrival, two boys ſwam off from the *morai* towards our veſſels, each armed with a long ſpear; and after they had approached pretty near, they began, in a very ſolemn manner, to chant a ſong; the ſubject of which, from their frequently mentioning the word *Orono*, and pointing to the village where Captain Cook had been ſlain, we concluded to be the late calamitous occurrence. Having ſung for near a quarter of an hour in a plaintive ſtrain, during all which time they continued in the water, they repaired on board the Diſcovery, and delivered up their ſpears; and, after remaining there a ſhort time, returned on ſhore. We could never learn who ſent them, or what was the object of this ceremony.

During the night, we took the uſual precautions for the ſecurity of the ſhips; and, as ſoon as it was dark, the two natives, who had viſited us the preceding evening, came off to us again. They aſſured us, that though the effects of our

* In the language of theſe iſlands, the word *matee* is generally uſed either to expreſs killing or wounding; and we were afterwards informed, that this chief had only received a trifling blow on the face, from a ſtone which had been ſtruck by one of our balls.

great guns, this afternoon, had greatly alarmed the chiefs, they had by no means relinquished their hostile intentions, and they advised us to be on our guard.

The following morning, which was the 17th, the boats of both ships were dispatched ashore to procure water; and the Discovery was warped close to the beach, in order to protect the persons employed in that service. We soon found that the intelligence which had been sent us by the priests, was not destitute of foundation, and that the islanders were determined to neglect no opportunity of annoying us, when it could be done without much hazard.

The villages, throughout this whole cluster of islands, are, for the most part, situated near the sea; and the adjacent ground is enclosed with stone walls, of the height of about three feet. These, we at first supposed, were designed for the division of property; but we now discovered that they served for a defence against invasion, for which purpose they were, perhaps, chiefly intended. They consist of loose stones, and the natives are very dexterous in shifting them, with great quickness, to such particular situations, as the direction of the attack may occasionally require. In the sides of the mountain, that stands near the bay, they have likewise holes, or caves, of considerable depth, whose entrance is secured by a fence of a similar kind. From behind both

these

theſe ſtations, the iſlanders perpetually harraſſed our watering party with ſtones; nor could the inconſiderable force we had on ſhore, with the advantage of muſquets, compel them to retreat.

Thus oppoſed, our people were ſo occupied in attending to their own ſafety, that, during the whole forenoon, they filled only one ton of water. It being therefore impoſſible for them to perform this ſervice, till their aſſailants were driven to a greater diſtance, the Diſcovery was ordered to diſlodge the enemy with her great guns; which being accompliſhed by means of a few diſcharges, the men landed without moleſtation.

The natives, however, made their appearance again, ſoon afterwards, in their uſual method of attack; and it was now deemed abſolutely neceſſary to burn down ſome ſtraggling huts, near the wall behind which they had ſheltered themſelves. In executing the orders that were given for that purpoſe, our people were hurried into acts of unneceſſary devaſtation and cruelty. Some allowance ought certainly to be made for their reſentment of the repeated inſults, and contemptuous behaviour of the iſlanders, and for their natural deſire of revenging the death of their beloved and reſpected Commander. But, at the ſame time, their conduct ſtrongly evinced, that the greateſt precaution is requiſite in truſting, even for a moment, the diſcretionary uſe of arms, in the hands of private ſoldiers, or ſeamen, on ſuch occaſions.

The

The ſtrictneſs of diſcipline, and the habits of obedience, by which their force is kept directed to ſuitable objects, lead them to conceive, that whenever they have the power, they have likewiſe a right to perform. Actual diſobedience being almoſt the only crime for which they expect to receive puniſhment, they are apt to conſider it as the ſole meaſure of right and wrong; and hence they are too ready to conclude, that what they can do with impunity, they may alſo do conſiſtently with honour and juſtice; ſo that the feelings of humanity, and that generoſity towards an unreſiſting enemy, which, at other times, is a ſtriking diſtinction of brave men, become but feeble reſtraints to the exerciſe of violence, when ſet in oppoſition to the deſire they naturally have of ſhewing their own power and independence.

It has been before obſerved, that directions had been given to burn only a few ſtraggling houſes, which afforded ſhelter to the iſlanders. We were therefore greatly ſurpriſed on perceiving the whole village in flames; and before a boat, that was ſent to ſtop the progreſs of the miſchief, could reach the land, the habitations of our old and conſtant friends, the prieſts, were all on fire. Mr. King had, therefore, great reaſon to lament the illneſs that confined him on board this day. The prieſts had always been under his protection; and, unfortunately, the officers then on duty having ſeldom been on ſhore at the *morai*, were but little

tle

tle acquainted with the circumſtances of the place. Had he been preſent himſelf, he might, in all probability, have been the means of preſerving their little ſociety from deſtruction.

In eſcaping from the flames, ſeveral of the inhabitants were ſhot; and our people cut off the heads of two of them, and brought them on board. The fate of one unhappy native was much lamented by all of us. As he was repairing to the well for water, he was ſhot at by one of the marines. The ball happened to ſtrike his calibaſh, which he inſtantly threw from him, and ran off. He was purſued into one of the caves above-mentioned, and no lion could have defended his den with greater bravery and fierceneſs; till at length, after he had found means to keep two of our people at bay for a conſiderable time, he expired, covered with wounds. This accident firſt brought us acquainted with the uſe to which theſe caverns are applied.

About this time a man, advanced in years, was taken priſoner, bound, and conveyed on board the Reſolution, in the ſame boat, with the heads of his two countrymen. We never obſerved horror ſo ſtrongly portrayed, as in the face of this perſon, nor ſo violent a tranſition to immoderate joy, as when he was untied, and given to underſtand, that he might depart in ſafety. He ſhewed us that he was not deficient in gratitude,

as

as he not only often returned afterwards with preſents of proviſions, but alſo did us other ſervices.

In a ſhort time after the deſtruction of the village, we ſaw, coming down the hill, a man, accompanied by fifteen or twenty boys, who held in their hands pieces of white cloth, plantains, green boughs, &c. It happened that this pacific embaſſy, as ſoon as they were within reach, received the fire of a party of our men. This, however, did not deter them from continuing their proceſſion, and the officer on duty came up, in time, to prevent a ſecond diſcharge. As they made a nearer approach, the principal perſon proved to be our friend Kaireekeea, who had fled when our people firſt ſet fire to the village, and had now returned, and expreſſed his deſire of being ſent on board the Reſolution.

On his arrival we found him extremely thoughtful and grave. We endeavoured to convince him of the neceſſity there was of ſetting fire to the village, by which his houſe, and thoſe of his brethren were unintentionally deſtroyed. He expoſtulated with us on our ingratitude and want of friendſhip; and, indeed, it was not till the preſent moment, that we knew the whole extent of the injury that had been done them. He informed us, that, confiding in the promiſes Mr. King had made them, and as well as in the aſſurances they had received from the men, who had brought us ſome of Captain Cook's remains,

they

they had not removed their effects back into the country, as the other inhabitants had done, but had put every valuable article of their own, as well as what they had collected from us, into a houſe adjoining to the *morai*, where they had the mortification to ſee it all ſet on fire by our people. He had, on coming on board, perceived the heads of his two countrymen lying on deck, at which he was greatly ſhocked, and earneſtly deſired that they might be thrown over-board. This requeſt, by the directions of Captain Clerke, was immediately complied with.

Our watering party returned on board in the evening, having ſuſtained no farther interruption. We paſſed a diſagreeable night; the cries and lamentations we heard from the ſhore being far more dreadful than ever. Our only conſolation, on this occaſion, aroſe from the hopes that a repetition of ſuch ſeverities might not be requiſite in future.

It is remarkable, that, amidſt all theſe diſturbances, the female natives, who were on board, did not offer to leave us, or diſcover any apprehenſions either for themſelves or their friends on ſhore. They appeared, indeed, ſo perfectly unconcerned, that ſome of them, who were on deck when the village was in flames, ſeemed to admire the ſpectacle, and frequently exclaimed, that it was *maitai*, or very fine.

The

The next morning the treacherous Koah came off to the ſhips, as uſual. There being no longer any neceſſity for keeping terms with him, Mr. King was allowed to treat him as he thought proper. When he approached the ſide of the Reſolution, ſinging a ſong, and offering a hog, and ſome plantains, to Mr. King, the latter ordered him to keep off, and cautioned him never to make his appearance again without the bones of Captain Cook, leſt his life ſhould pay the forfeit of his repeated breach of faith. He did not appear much mortified with this unwelcome reception, but immediately returned on ſhore, and joined a party of his countrymen, who were throwing ſtones at our waterers. The body of the young man, who had been killed the preceding day, was found this morning lying at the entrance of the cave; and a mat was thrown over him by ſome of our people; ſoon after which they ſaw ſeveral of the natives carrying him off on their ſhoulders, and could hear them chanting, as they marched, a mournful ſong.

The iſlanders being at length convinced that it was not the want of ability to chaſtize them, which had induced us at firſt to tolerate their provocations, deſiſted from moleſting our people; and, towards the evening, a chief, named Eappo, who had ſeldom viſited us, but whom we knew to be a man of the firſt diſtinction, came with preſents from Terreeoboo to ſue for peace.

Theſe

Theſe preſents were accepted, and the chief was diſmiſſed with the following anſwer: That no peace would be granted, till the remains of Captain Cook ſhould be reſtored.

We were informed by Eappo, that the fleſh of all the bones of our people who had been ſlain, as well as the bones of the trunks, had been burnt; that the limb-bones of the marines had been diſtributed among the inferior chiefs; and that the remains of Captain Cook had been diſpoſed of as follows: the head to a great *Eree*, called Kahoo-opeou; the hair to Maiha-maiha; and the arms, legs, and thighs, to Terreeoboo. After it was dark, many of the natives came off with various ſorts of vegetables; and we alſo received from Kaireekeea two large preſents of the ſame articles.

The next day was principally employed in ſending and receiving the meſſages that paſſed between Captain Clerke and the old king. Eappo was very urgent, that one of our officers ſhould go on ſhore; and offered to remain on board, in the mean time, as an hoſtage. This requeſt, however, was not complied with; and he left us with a promiſe of bringing the bones the following day. Our watering party, at the beach, did not meet with the leaſt oppoſition from the iſlanders; who, notwithſtanding our cautious behaviour, again ventured themſelves amongſt us without any marks of diffidence or apprehenſion.

On

On Saturday the 20th, early in the morning, we had the ſatisfaction of getting the fore-maſt ſtepped. This operation was attended with conſiderable difficulty, and ſome danger, our ropes being ſo extremely rotten, that the purchaſe ſeveral times gave way.

This morning, between the hours of ten and eleven, we ſaw a numerous body of the natives deſcending the hill, which is over the beach, in a ſort of proceſſion, each man carrying on his ſhoulders two or three ſugar-canes, and ſome bread-fruit, plantains, and taro, in his hand. They were preceded by two drummers, who, when they reached the water-ſide, ſeated themſelves by a white flag, and began beating their drums, while thoſe who had followed them, advanced, one by one, and depoſited the preſents they had brought with them; after which they retired in the ſame order. Soon afterwards Eappo appeared in his long feathered cloak, bearing ſomething with great ſolemnity in his hands; and having ſtationed himſelf on a rock, he made ſigns that a boat ſhould be ſent him.

Captain Clerke, ſuppoſing that the chief had brought the bones of Captain Cook (which, indeed, proved to be the caſe), went himſelf in the pinnace to receive them, and ordered Mr. King to attend him in the cutter. When they arrived at the beach, Eappo, entering the pinnace, delivered the bones to Captain Clerke, wrapped up

in

in a great quantity of fine new cloth, and covered with a ſpotted cloak of black and white feathers. He afterwards attended our gentlemen to the Reſolution, but could not be prevailed on to accompany them on board; being, perhaps, from a ſenſe of decency, unwilling to be preſent at the opening of the parcel.

We found, in this bundle, both the hands of Captain Cook entire, which were well known to us from a ſcar on one of them, that divided the fore finger from the thumb, the whole length of the metacarpal bone; the ſkull, but with the ſcalp ſeparated from it, and the bones of the face wanting; the ſcalp, with the ears adhering to it, and the hair upon it cut ſhort; the bones of both the arms, with the ſkin of the fore-arms hanging to them; the bones of the thighs and legs joined together, but without the feet. The ligaments of the joints were obſerved to be entire; and the whole ſhewed ſufficient marks of having been in the fire, except the hands, which had the fleſh remaining upon them, and were cut in ſeveral places, and crammed with ſalt, moſt probably with a view of preſerving them. The ſkull was free from any fracture, but the ſcalp had a cut in the back part of it. The lower jaw and feet, which were wanting, had been ſeized, as Eappo informed us, by different *Erees*; and he alſo told us, that Terreeoboo was uſing every means to recover them.

Eappo, and the king's ſon, came on board the next morning, and brought with them not only the remaining bones of Captain Cook, but likewiſe the barrels of his gun, his ſhoes, and ſome other trifles which had belonged to him. Eappo aſſured us, that Terreeoboo, Maiha-maiha, and himſelf were extremely deſirous of peace; that they had given us the moſt convincing proofs of it; and that they had been prevented from giving it ſooner by the other chiefs, many of whom were ſtill diſaffected to us. He lamented, with the moſt lively ſorrow, the death of ſix chiefs, who had been killed by our people; ſome of whom, he ſaid, were among our beſt friends. He informed us, that the cutter had been taken away by Pareea's people, probably in revenge for the blow that he had received; and that it had been broken up the following day. The arms of the marines, which we had alſo demanded, had been carried off, he ſaid, by the populace, and were irrecoverable.

Nothing now remained, but to perform the laſt ſolemn offices to our excellent Commander. Eappo was diſmiſſed with orders to *taboo* all the bay; and, in the afternoon, the bones having been depoſited in a coffin, the funeral ſervice was read over them, and they were committed to the deep with the uſual military honours. Our feelings, on this mournful occaſion, are more eaſy to be conceived than expreſſed.

During

During the morning of the 22d, not a canoe was ſeen in the bay. The *taboo*, which Eappo, at our deſire, had laid on it the preceding day, not being yet taken off. At length that chief came off to us. We aſſured him, that we were now perfectly ſatisfied; and that, as the *Orono* was buried, all remembrance of the late unhappy tranſactions was buried with him. We afterwards reqeſted him to take off the *taboo*, and to make it known, that the iſlanders might bring proviſions to us as uſual. The ſhips were ſoon ſurrounded with canoes, and many of the *Erees* came on board, expreſſing their grief at what had happened, and their ſatisfaction at our reconciliation. Several of our friends, who did not favour us with a viſit, ſent preſents of large hogs, and other proviſions. Among the reſt, the old treacherous Koah came off to us, but we refuſed him admittance.

As we were now prepared for putting to ſea, Captain Clerke imagining, that, if the intelligence of our proceedings ſhould reach the iſlands to leeward before us, it might have a bad effect, gave orders, that the ſhips ſhould be unmoored. About eight in the evening, we diſmiſſed all the natives; and Eappo, and the friendly Kaireekeea, took their leave of us in a very affectionate manner. We immediately weighed anchor, and ſtood out of Karakakooa bay. The iſlanders were aſſembled in great numbers on the ſhore; and, as

we paſſed along, received our laſt farewels, with every mark of good-will and affection.

---

## CHAP. V.

*Leave Karakakooa Bay—In queſt of an Harbour on the South-Eaſt Side of Mowee—Driven to Leeward by the Current, and ſtrong eaſterly Winds—Paſs Tahoorowa—South-weſt Side of Mowee deſcribed—Proceed to Woahoo—The north-eaſt Coaſt of Woahoo deſcribed—Diſappointed in attempting to water—Proceed to Atooi—Anchor in Wymoa Bay—The Natives not ſo friendly as before—The watering Party guarded by Marines—Inſolence of the Natives, who demanded a Hatchet for every Caſk of Water—The Iſlanders treat our People with Contempt—They ſteal Mr. King's Hanger out of his Hand—Their Inſolence at the Water-ſide—Are fired at by two Marines—One of them wounded—Viſit from the contending Chiefs—Anchor off Oneeheow—Departure.*

HAVING cleared the land about ten, we ſtood to the northward, with a view of ſearching for an harbour, which the natives had often mentioned, on the ſouth-eaſt ſide of Mowee.

wee. We found ourſelves, the next morning, driven to leeward, by a ſwell from the north-eaſt; and a freſh gale, from the ſame quarter, drove us ſtill farther to the weſtward. At midnight we tacked, and ſtood four hours to the ſouth, to keep clear of the land; and, at day-break, on the 24th, we were ſtanding towards a ſmall barren iſland, named Tahoorowa, about ſeven miles ſouth-weſt of Mowee.

Giving up all proſpect of making a cloſer examination of the ſouth-eaſt parts of Mowee, we bore away, and kept along the ſouth-eaſt ſide of Tahoorowa. Steering cloſe round its weſtern extremity, in order to fetch the weſt ſide of Mowee, we ſuddenly ſhoaled our water, and ſaw the ſea breaking on ſome rocks, almoſt right a-head. We then kept away about a league and a half, and again ſteered to the northward; when we ſtood for a paſſage between Mowee, and an iſland named Ranai. In the afternoon, the weather was calm, with light airs from the weſt. We ſtood to the north-north-weſt; but, obſerving a ſhoal about ſunſet, and the weather being unſettled, we ſtood towards the ſouth.

We had now paſſed the ſouth-weſt ſide of this iſland, without being able to approach the ſhore. This ſide of the iſland forms the ſame diſtant view as the north-eaſt, as ſeen when we returned from the north, in November, 1778; the hilly parts, connected by a low flat iſthmus, having,

at the firſt view, the appearance of two ſeparate iſlands. This deceptive appearance continued, till we were within about ten leagues of the coaſt, which, bending a great way inward, formed a capacious bay. The weſternmoſt point, off which the ſhoal runs that we have juſt now mentioned, is rendered remarkable by a ſmall hillock; ſouth of which is a fine ſandy bay; and, on the ſhore, are ſeveral huts, with plenty of cocoa-trees about them.

In the courſe of the day, ſeveral of the natives viſited us, and brought proviſions with them. We preſently diſcovered, that they had heard of our unfortunate diſaſters at Owhyhee. They were extremely anxious to be informed of the particulars, from a woman who had hid herſelf in the Reſolution, in order to obtain a paſſage to Atooi; making particular enquiries about Pareea, and ſome other chiefs; and ſeeming much agitated at the death of Kaneena, and his brother. But, in whatever light this buſineſs might have been repreſented by the woman, it produced no bad effect in their behaviour, which was civil and obliging to an extreme.

During the night, the weather varied continually, but on the 25th, in the morning, the wind being at eaſt, we ſteered along the ſouth ſide of Ranai, till almoſt noon, when we had baffling winds and calms till the evening; after which, we had a light eaſterly breeze, and ſteered for the weſt

weſt of Morotoi. The current, which had ſet from the north-eaſt, ever ſince we left Karakakooa bay, changed its direction, in the courſe of this day, to the ſouth-eaſt.

The wind was again variable during the night; but, early in the morning of the 26th, it ſettled at eaſt; blowing ſo freſh, as to oblige us to double-reef the top-ſails. At ſeven, we opened a ſmall bay, diſtant about two leagues, having a fine ſandy beach; but not perceiving any appearance of freſh water, we endeavoured to get to the windward of Woahoo, an iſland which we had ſeen in January, 1778. We ſaw the land about two in the afternoon, bearing weſt by north, at the diſtance of about eight leagues. We tacked, as ſoon as it was dark, and again bore away at day-light on the 27th. Between ten and eleven, we were about a league off the ſhore, and near the middle of the north-eaſt ſide of the iſland.

To the northward, the coaſt conſiſts of detached hills, aſcending perpendicularly from the ſea; the ſides being covered with wood, and the vallies, between them, appearing to be fertile, and well cultivated. An extenſive bay, was obſervable to the ſouthward, bounded, to the ſouth-eaſt, by a low point of land, covered with cocoa-nut trees; off which, an inſulated rock appeared, at the diſtance of a mile from the ſhore.

The wind continuing to blow freſh, we were unwilling to entangle ourſelves with a lee-ſhore. Inſtead of attempting, therefore, to examine the bay, we hauled up and ſteered in the direction of the coaſt. At noon, we were about two leagues from the iſland, and a-breaſt of the north point of it. It is low and flat, having a reef ſtretching off almoſt a mile and an half. Between the north point, and a head-land to the ſouth-weſt, the land bends inward, and ſeemed to promiſe a good road. We therefore ſteered along the ſhore, at about a mile diſtance. At two, we were induced, by the ſight of a fine river, to anchor in thirteen fathoms water. In the afternoon, Mr. King attended the two Captains on ſhore, where few of the natives were to be ſeen, and thoſe principally women. The men, we were informed, were gone to Morotoi, to fight Tahyterree; but their chief, Perreeoranee, remained behind, and would certainly attend us, as ſoon as he was informed of our arrival.

The water, to our great diſappointment, had a brackiſh taſte, for about two hundred yards up the river; beyond which, however, it was perfectly freſh, and was a delightful ſtream. Farther up, we came to the conflux of two ſmall rivulets, branching off to the right and left of a ſteep romantic mountain. The banks of the river, and all that we ſaw of Woahoo, are in fine cultivation, and full of villages; the face of the coun-

country being alſo remarkably beautiful and pictureſque.

As it would have been a laborious buſineſs to have watered at this place, Mr. King was diſpatched to ſearch about the coaſt to leeward; but, being unable to land, on account of a reef of coral, which extended along the ſhore, Captain Clerke reſolved to proceed immediately to Atooi. In the morning, about eight, we weighed, and ſtood to the northward; and, on the 28th, at day-light, we bore away for that iſland, and were in ſight of it by noon. We were off its eaſtern extremity, which is a green flat point, about ſun-ſet.

It being dark, we did not venture to run for the road on the ſouth-weſt ſide, but ſpent the night in plying on and off, and anchored, at nine the next morning, in twenty-five fathoms water. In running down, from the ſouth-eaſt point of the iſland, we ſaw, in many places, the appearance of ſhoal water, at ſome diſtance from the land.

Being anchored in our old ſtation, ſeveral canoes came to viſit us; but it was very obſervable, that there was not that appearance of cordiality in their manner, and complacency in their countenances, as when we ſaw them before. They had no ſooner got on board, but one of them informed us, that we had communicated a diſorder to the women, which had killed many perſons of

both

both ſexes. He, at that time, was afflicted with the venereal diſeaſe, and minutely deſcribed the various ſymptoms which had attended it. As no appearance of that diſorder had been obſerved amongſt them, on our firſt arrival, we were, it is to be feared, the authors of this irreparable miſchief.

The principal object in view, at this place, was to water the ſhips with as much expedition as poſſible; and Mr. King was ſent on ſhore in the afternoon, with the launch and pinnace, laden with caſks. He was accompanied by the gunner of the Reſolution, who was inſtructed to trade for ſome proviſions; and they were attended by a guard of five marines. Multitudes of people were collected upon the beach, by whom, at firſt, we were kindly received; but, after we had landed the caſks, they began to be exceedingly troubleſome.

Knowing, from experience, how difficult a taſk it was to repreſs this diſpoſition, without the interpoſition of their chiefs, we were ſorry to be informed, that they were all at a diſtant part of the iſland. Indeed, we both felt and lamented the want of their aſſiſtance; for we could hardly form a circle, as our practice uſually was, for the ſafety and convenience of the trading party. No ſooner had we taken this ſtep, and poſted marines to keep off the populace, than a man took hold of the bayonet belonging to one of the

ſoldier's

ſoldier's muſquets, and endeavoured to wrench it forcibly from his hand. Mr. King immediately advanced towards them, when the native quitted his hold, and retired; but immediately returned, having a ſpear in one hand, and a dagger in the other; and it was with difficulty that his countrymen could reſtrain him from engaging with the ſoldier. This affray was occaſioned by the native's having received, from the ſoldier, a ſlight prick with his bayonet, to induce him to keep without the line.

Our ſituation, at this time, required great management and circumſpection; Mr. King accordingly enjoined, that no one ſhould preſume to fire, or proceed to any other act of violence, without poſitive commands. Having given theſe inſtructions, he was ſummoned to the aſſiſtance of the watering party, where he found the natives in the ſame miſchievous diſpoſition. They had peremptorily demanded, for every caſk of water, a large hatchet; which not being complied with, they would not permit the ſailors to roll them to the boats.

As ſoon as Mr. King had joined them, one of the natives approached him, with great inſolence, and made the ſame demand. Mr. King told him, that, as a friend, he was welcome to a hatchet, but he certainly would carry off the water, without paying for it; and inſtantly ordered the pinnace men to proceed; at the ſame time

time calling for three marines, from the trading party, to protect them.

This becoming ſpirit ſo far ſucceeded, as to prevent any daring attempt to interrupt us, but they ſtill perſevered in the moſt teaſing and inſulting behaviour. Some of them, under pretence of aſſiſting the ſailors, in rolling the caſks towards the ſhore, gave them a different direction; others ſtole the hats from off our people's heads, pulled them backward by the ſkirts of their clothes, and tripped up their heels; the populace, during all this time, ſhouting and laughing, with a mixture of mockery and malice. They afterwards took an opportunity of ſtealing the cooper's bucket, and forcibly took away his bag. Their principal aim, however, was to poſſeſs themſelves of the muſquets of the marines, who were continually complaining of their attempts to force them from their hands. Though they, in general, preſerved a kind of deference and reſpect for Mr. King, yet they obliged him to contribute his ſhare towards their ſtock of plunder. One of them approached him, in a familiar manner, and diverted his attention, whilſt another ſeized his hanger, which he held careleſsly in his hand, and ran away with it.

Such inſolence was not to be repelled by force. Prudence dictated that we muſt patiently ſubmit to it; at the ſame time, guarding againſt its effects as well as we were able. Mr. King was, how-

however, ſomewhat alarmed, on being ſoon after informed by the ſerjeant of marines, that, turning ſuddenly round, he ſaw a man behind him, armed with a dagger, in the poſition of ſtriking. Though he might, perhaps, be miſtaken, in this particular, our ſituation was truly critical and alarming; and the ſmalleſt error, or miſtake, on our part, might have been of fatal conſequences.

Our people being ſeparated into three ſmall parties; one filling caſks at the lake; another rolling them to the ſhore; and a third purchaſing proviſions; Mr. King had ſome intentions of collecting them together, in order to protect the performance of one duty at a time. But, on due reflection, he thought it more adviſeable to let them proceed as they had begun. If a real attack had been made, even our whole force could have made but a poor reſiſtance. He thought, on the other hand, that ſuch a ſtep might operate to our diſadvantage, as being an evident token of our fears. Beſides, in the preſent caſe, the crowd was kept divided, and many of them wholly occupied in bartering.

The principal cauſe of their not attacking us was, perhaps, their dread of the effects of our arms; and, as we appeared to place ſo much confidence in this advantage, as to oppoſe only five marines to ſuch a multitude of people, their ideas of our ſuperiority muſt have been greatly exalted. It was our buſineſs to cheriſh this opi-

nion;

nion; and, it muſt ever be acknowledged, to the honour of the whole party, that it was impoſſible for any men to behave better, in order to ſtrengthen theſe impreſſions. Whatever could be conſidered as a jeſt, they received with patience and good-nature; but, if they were interrupted by any ſerious attempt, they oppoſed it with reſolute looks and menaces. At length, we ſo far ſucceeded, as to get all our caſks to the ſea-ſide, without any accident of conſequence.

While our people were getting the caſks into the launch, the inhabitants, thinking they ſhould have no farther opportunity of plundering, grew more daring and inſolent. The ſerjeant of marines luckily ſuggeſted to Mr. King, the advantage of ſending off his party firſt into the boats, by which means the muſquets would be taken out of their reach; which, as above related, were the grand objects the iſlanders had in view: and, if they ſhould happen to attack us, the marines could more effectually defend us, than if they were on ſhore.

Every thing was now in the boats, and only Mr. King, Mr. Anderſon, the gunner, and a ſeaman of the boat's crew, remained on ſhore. The pinnace laying beyond the ſurf, which we were under a neceſſity of ſwimming through, Mr. King ordered the other two to make the beſt of their way to it, and told them he would follow them.

They

They both refuſed to comply with this order, and it became a matter of conteſt, who ſhould be the laſt on ſhore. Some haſty expreſſion, it ſeems, Mr. King had juſt before made uſe of to the ſailor, which he conſidered as a reflection on his courage, and excited his reſentment; and the old gunner, as a point of honour was now ſtarted, conceived it to be his duty to take a part in it. In this whimſical ſituation, they, perhaps, might have long remained, had not the diſpute been ſettled by the ſtones, which began to fly plentifully about us, and by the exclamations of the people from the boats, begging us to be expeditious, as the natives were armed with clubs and ſpears, and purſuing us into the water. Mr. King arrived firſt at the pinnace, and, perceiving Mr. Anderſon was ſo far behind, as not to be entirely out of danger, he ordered one muſquet to be fired; but, in the hurry of executing his orders, the marines fired two. The natives immediately ran away, leaving only one man and woman on the beach. The man attempted to riſe ſeveral times, but was not able, having been wounded in the groin. The iſlanders, in a ſhort time, returned; and, ſurrounding the wounded man, brandiſhed their ſpears at us, with an air of defiance; but, by the time we reached the ſhips, ſome perſons arrived which we ſuppoſed to be the chiefs, by whom they were all driven from the ſhore.

Captain Clerke, during our abſence, had been under terrible apprehenſions for our ſafety; which had been conſiderably increaſed by his miſunderſtanding ſome of the natives, with whom he had had ſome converſation on board. The name of Captain Cook being frequently mentioned, accompanied with circumſtantial deſcriptions of death and deſtruction, he concluded that they had received intelligence of the unfortunate events at Owhyhee, to which they alluded. But they were only endeavouring to make him underſtand, what wars had ariſen on account of the goats, which Captain Cook had left at Oneeheow, and that the poor goats had been ſlaughtered, during the conteſt for the property of them. Captain Clerke, applying theſe ſhocking repreſentations to our misfortunes at Owhyhee, and to an indication of revenge, fixed his teleſcope upon us the whole time; and, as ſoon as he ſaw the ſmoke of the muſquets, ordered the boats to be put off to our aſſiſtance.

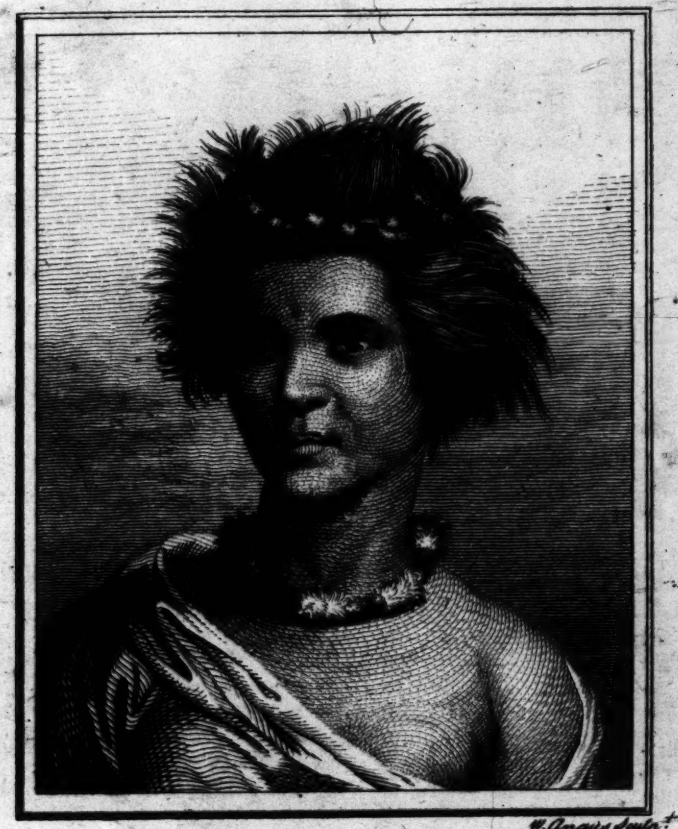
On the 2d of March, being the next day, Mr. King was again ordered on ſhore, with the watering party. As we had ſo narrowly eſcaped the preceding day, Captain Clerke augmented our force from both ſhips, and we had a guard of forty men under arms. This precaution, however, was found to be unneceſſary; for the beach was left entirely to ourſelves, and the ground, extending from the landing-place to the lake, *ta-*

*booed.*

BRITISH
6 AU 75
MUSEUM

BRITISH
6 AU 75
MUSEUM





W. Angus Sculp.t

A MAN *and* WOMAN *of* SANDWICH ISLANDS.

the bay were in the direction of north by eaſt, and ſouth by weſt. A ſmall village was ſituated on the north ſide of the bay, to the eaſtward of which were four wells of good water. Mr. Bligh went far enough to the north to convince himſelf that Oreehoua, and Oneeheow, were two ſeparate iſlands.

---

## CHAP. VI.

*The Number, Names, and Situation, of the Sandwich Iſlands—Extent of Owhyhee, which is the largeſt of the whole Group—Account of its Diſtricts—Its Coaſts, and the adjacent Country, deſcribed—Snowy Mountains—Volcanic Appearances—Account of a Journey into the interior Parts of Owhyhee—Plantations—Account of a Hermit—The Country cultivated to the greateſt Advantage—A remarkable Cave—Deſcription of Mowee—Ranai—Morotoi—Tahoorowa—Woahoo—Atooi—Oneeheow—Oreehoua—Tahoora—Climate of the Sandwich Iſles—Winds—Currents—Tides—Quadrupeds—Amazing Supply of Pork procured by us—Birds—Vegetables.*

BEING now on the point of taking our final leave of the Sandwich Iſlands, we ſhall here give a general account of their ſituation and

natural hiſtory, as well as of the cuſtoms and manners of the natives. This will ſerve as a kind of ſupplement to the former deſcription, which was the reſult of our firſt viſit to theſe iſlands.

This group is compoſed of eleven iſlands, extending in longitude from 199° 36′, to 205° 6′, eaſt, and in latitude from 18° 54′, to 22° 15′ north. Their names, according to the natives, are, 1. Owhyhee. 2. Atooi, Atowi, or Towi; which is alſo ſometimes called Kowi. 3. Woahoo, or Oahoo. 4. Mowee. 5. Morotoi, or Morokoi. 6. Oreehoua, or Reehoua. 7. Morotinnee, or Morokinnee. 8. Tahoora. 9. Ranai, or Oranai. 10. Oneeheow, or Neeheehow. 11. Kahowrowee, or Tahoorowa. Theſe are all inhabited, except Tahoora and Morotinnee. Beſides thoſe we have enumerated, we heard of another iſland named Modoo-papapa, or Komodoo-papapa, ſituated to the weſt-ſouth-weſt of Tahoora; it is low and ſandy, and is viſited ſolely for the purpoſe of catching turtle and water-fowl. As we could never learn that the natives had knowledge of any other iſlands, it is moſt probable that no others exiſt in their neighbourhood.

Captain Cook had diſtinguiſhed this cluſter of iſlands by the name of the Sandwich Iſlands, in honour of the Earl of Sandwich, then firſt Lord of the Admiralty, under whoſe adminiſtration he had

had enriched Geography with ſo many valuable diſcoveries; a tribute juſtly due to that nobleman, for the encouragement and ſupport which theſe voyages derived from his power, and for the zealous eagerneſs with which he ſeconded the views of our illuſtrious navigator.

Owhyhee, the moſt eaſterly of theſe iſlands, and by far the largeſt of them all, is of a triangular figure, and nearly equilateral. The angular points conſtitute the northern, ſouthern, and eaſtern extremities. The latitude of the northern extreme is 20° 17′ north, and its longitude 204° 2′ eaſt: the ſouthern end ſtands in the longitude of 204° 15′ eaſt, and in the latitude of 18° 54′ north; and the eaſtern extremity is in the latitude of 19° 34′ north, and in the longitude of 205° 6′ eaſt. The circumference of the whole iſland is about 255 geographical miles, or 293 Engliſh ones. Its breadth is twenty-four leagues; and its greateſt length, which lies nearly in a north and ſouth direction, is twenty-eight leagues and a half. It is divided into ſix extenſive diſtricts, namely, Akona and Koaarra, which are on the weſt ſide; Kaoo and Opoona, on the ſouth-eaſt; and Aheedoo and Amakooa, on the north-eaſt.

A mountain named *Mouna Kaah*, (or the mountain Kaah) which riſes in three peaks, continually covered with ſnow, and may be diſcerned at the diſtance of forty leagues, ſeparates the diſ-

trict of Amakooa from that of Aheedoo. The coaſt, to the northward of this mountain, is compoſed of high and abrupt cliffs, down which fall many beautiful caſcades of water. We once flattered ourſelves with the hopes of finding a harbour round a bluff head, on a part of this coaſt, in the latitude of 20° 10′ north, and the longitude of 204° 26′ eaſt; but after we had doubled the point, and were ſtanding cloſe in, we found that it was connected, by a low valley, with another elevated head to the north weſtward. The country riſes inland with a gradual aſcent, and is interſected by narrow deep glens, or rather chaſms: it ſeemed to be well cultivated, and to have many villages ſcattered about it. The ſnowy mountain above-mentioned is very ſteep, and its loweſt part abounds with wood.

The coaſt of Aheedoo is of a moderate elevation; and the interior parts have the appearance of being more even than the country towards the north-weſt. We cruiſed off theſe two diſtricts for near a month; and, whenever our diſtance from the ſhore would permit, were ſurrounded by canoes laden with refreſhments of every kind. On this ſide of the iſland we often met with a very heavy ſea, and a great ſwell; and, as there was much foul ground off the ſhore, we ſeldom made a nearer approach to the land than two or three leagues.

The

The coaſt towards the north-eaſt of Apoona, which conſtitutes the eaſtern extreme of the iſland, is rather low and flat. In the inland parts the acclivity is very gradual; and the country abounds with bread-fruit and cocoa-nut trees. This appeared to us to be the fineſt part of the whole iſland; and we were afterwards informed, that the king occaſionally reſided here. The hills, at the ſouth-weſtern extremity, riſe with ſome abruptneſs from the ſea-ſide, leaving only a narrow border of low land towards the beach. The ſides of theſe hills were covered with verdure; but the adjacent country ſeemed thinly inhabited.

When our ſhips doubled the eaſt point of the iſland, we had ſight of another ſnowy mountain, called by the natives *Mouna Roa* (or the extenſive mountain) which, during the whole time we were ſailing along the ſouth-eaſtern ſide, continued to be a very conſpicuous object. It was flat at the ſummit, which was perpetually involved in ſnow; and we once obſerved its ſides alſo ſlightly covered with it for a conſiderable way down. According to the tropical line of ſnow, as determined by Monſieur Condamine, from obſervations made on the Cordilleras in America, the height of this mountain muſt be, at leaſt, 16,020 feet. It therefore exceeds the height of the *Pico de Teyde*, or Peak of Teneriffe, by 3689 feet, according to the computation of the Chevalier de Borda, or 724, according to that of Dr.

Dr. Heberden. The peaks of Mouna Kaah ſeemed to be of the height of about half a mile; and, as they are wholly covered with ſnow, the altitude of their ſummits muſt at leaſt be 18,400 feet.

The coaſt of Kaoo exhibits a moſt horrid and diſmal proſpect; the whole country having, to appearance, undergone an entire change from the conſequences of ſome dreadful convulſion. The ground is, in all parts, covered with cinders; and, in many places, interſected with blackiſh ſtreaks, which ſeem to mark the progreſs of a *lava* that has flowed, not many centuries ago, from Mouna Roa to the ſhore. The ſouth promontory appears like the mere dregs of a volcano. The head-land conſiſts of broken and craggy rocks, terminating in acute points, and irregularly piled on each other. Notwithſtanding the dreary aſpect of this part of the iſland, it contains many villages, and is far more populous than the verdant mountains of Apoona. Nor is it difficult to account for this circumſtance. Theſe iſlanders not being poſſeſſed of any cattle, have no occaſion for paſturage; and are therefore inclined to prefer ſuch ground, as is either more conveniently ſituated for fiſhing, or beſt adapted to the cultivation of plantains and yams. Now amidſt theſe ruins, there are many ſpots of rich ſoil, which are, with great care, laid out in plantations;

tations; and the neighbouring ſea abounds with excellent fiſh of various kinds.

Off this part of the coaſt, at leſs than a cable's length from the ſhore, we did not ſtrike ground with one hundred and ſixty fathoms of line, except in a ſmall bight to the eaſt of the ſouthern point, where we found from fifty to fifty-eight fathoms of water, over a ſandy bottom. It may be proper to obſerve, before we proceed to give an account of the weſtern diſtricts, that the whole coaſt we have deſcribed, from the northern to the ſouthern extreme, affords not a ſingle harbour, nor the leaſt ſhelter for ſhipping.

The ſouth-weſtern parts of Akona are in a condition ſimilar to that of the adjoining diſtrict of Kaoo; but the country, further towards the north, has been carefully cultivated, and is exceedingly populous. In this diviſion of the iſland, lies Karakakooa Bay, of which we have already given a deſcription. Scarce any thing is ſeen along the coaſt, but the fragments of black ſcorched rocks; behind which, the ground, for the ſpace of about two miles and a half, riſes gradually, and ſeems to have been once covered with looſe burnt ſtones. Theſe have been cleared away by the inhabitants, frequently to the depth of three feet and upwards; and the fertility of the ſoil has amply repaid their labour. Here they cultivate in a rich aſhy mould, the cloth-plant and ſweet potatoes. Groves of coçoa-nut-

trees

trees are ſcattered among the fields, which are incloſed with ſtone fences. On the riſing ground beyond theſe, they plant bread-fruit trees, which flouriſh with ſurpriſing luxuriance.

The diſtrict of Koaarra extends from the moſt weſterly point to the northern extreme of the iſland. The whole coaſt between them forms a ſpacious bay, which is called by the natives Toe-yah-yah, and is bounded to the northward by two conſpicuous hills. Towards the bottom of this bay there is foul, corally ground, that extends to the diſtance of upwards of a mile from the ſhore, without which there is good anchorage. The country, as far as the eye could diſcern, appeared to be fruitful and populous; but no freſh water was to be found. The ſoil ſeemed to be of the ſame kind with that of the diſtrict of Kaoo.

Having thus given an account of the coaſts of the iſland of Owhyhee, and the adjacent country, we ſhall now relate ſome particulars reſpecting the interior parts, from the information we obtained from a party, who ſet out on the 26th of January, on an expedition up the country, principally with an intention of reaching the ſnowy mountains. Having previouſly procured two of the iſlanders to ſerve them as guides, they quitted the village about four o'clock in the afternoon. Their courſe was eaſterly, inclining a little to the ſouth. Within three or four miles from the bay, they found the country as already deſcribed;

*vooed*. Hence we concluded, that ſome of the chiefs had viſited this quarter; who, being unable to ſtay, had conſiderately taken this ſtep, that we might be accommodated with ſafety. Several men appeared with ſpears and daggers, on the other ſide of the river, but never attempted to moleſt us. Their women came over, and ſeated themſelves cloſe by us, on the banks; and, about the middle of the day, ſome of the men were prevailed on to bring us hogs and roots, and alſo to dreſs them for us. When we had left the beach, they came down to the ſea-ſide, and one of them had the audacity to throw a ſtone at us; but, as his conduct was highly cenſured by the reſt, we did not expreſs any kind of reſentment.

On the 3d, we completed our watering, without much difficulty; and, on returning to the ſhips, we were informed, that ſeveral chiefs had been on board, and had apologized for the conduct of their countrymen, attributing their riotous behaviour to the quarrels then ſubſiſting among the principal people of the iſland, and which had deſtroyed all order and ſubordination.

The government of Atooi was diſputed between Toneoneo, who had the ſupreme power when we were there the preceding year, and a youth named Teavee. By different fathers, they are both the grandſons of Perreeorannee, king of Woahoo; who gave Atooi to the former, and

Oneeheow to the latter. The quarrel originated about the goats which we had left at Oneeheow the year before; they being claimed by Toneoneo, as that iſland was a dependency of his. The adherents of Teavee inſiſting on the right of poſſeſſion, both parties prepared to ſupport their pretenſions, and a battle enſued juſt before our arrival, wherein Toneoneo had been defeated. Toneoneo was likely to become more affected by the conſequence of this victory, than by the loſs of the objects in diſpute; for the mother of Teavee having married a ſecond huſband, who was not only a chief at Atooi, but alſo at the head of a powerful faction there, he thought of embracing the preſent opportunity of driving Toneoneo out of the iſland, that his ſon-in-law might ſucceed to the government. The goats, which had increaſed to ſix, and would probably have ſtocked theſe iſlands in a few years, were deſtroyed in this conteſt.

On the 4th we were viſited, on board the Reſolution, by the father-in-law, the mother, and the ſiſter of the young prince, who made ſeveral curious preſents to Captain Clerke. Among the reſt, were ſome fiſh-hooks, which were made from the bones of Terreeoboo's father, who had been killed in an unſucceſsful deſcent upon Woahoo. Alſo a fly-flap, from the hands of the prince's ſiſter, which had a human bone for its handle, and had been given to her by her father-

in-law,

in-law, as a trophy. They were not accompanied by young Teavee, he being then engaged in the performance of ſome religious rites, on account of the victory he had obtained.

This day, and the 5th and 6th, were employed in completing the Diſcovery's water. The carpenters were engaged in caulking the ſhips, and preparing for our next cruiſe. We no longer received any moleſtation from the natives, who ſupplied us plentifully with pork and vegetables.

We were now viſited by an Indian, who brought a piece of iron on board, to be formed into the ſhape of a *pahooa*. It was the bolt of ſome large ſhip timbers, but neither the officers nor men could diſcover to what nation it belonged; though, from the ſhape of the bolt, and the paleneſs of the iron, they were convinced it was not Engliſh. They enquired ſtrictly of the native how he came poſſeſſed of it, when he informed them, that it was taken out of a large piece of timber, which had been driven upon their iſland, ſince we were there in January, 1778.

We received a viſit, on the 7th, from Toneoneo, at which we were ſurprized. Hearing the dowager princeſs was on board, he could hardly be prevailed on to enter the ſhip. When they met, they caſt an angry lowering look at each other. He did not ſtay long, and appeared much dejected. We remarked, however, with ſome degree of ſurprize, that the women proſtrated

themſelves before him, both at his coming and going away; and all the natives on board, treated him with that reſpect which is uſually paid to perſons of his rank. It was ſomewhat remarkable, that a man, who was then in a ſtate of actual hoſtility with Teavee's party, ſhould venture alone within the power of his enemies. Indeed, the civil diſſenſions, which are frequent in all the ſouth ſea iſlands, ſeem to be conducted without much acrimony; the depoſed Governor ſtill enjoying the rank of an *Eree*, and may put in practice ſuch means as may ariſe, to regain the conſequence which he has loſt.

At nine, in the morning of the 8th, we weighed, and proceeded towards Oneeheow, and came to anchor in twenty fathoms water, at about three in the afternoon, nearly on the ſpot where we anchored in 1778. With the other anchor, we moored in twenty-ſix fathoms water. We had a ſtrong gale from the eaſtward in the night, and, the next morning, the ſhip had driven a whole cable's length, both anchors being almoſt brought a-head; in which ſituation we were obliged to continue, this and the two following days.

The weather being more moderate on the 12th, the Maſter was diſpatched to the north-weſt ſide of the iſland, in ſearch of a more commodious place for anchoring. In the evening, he returned, having found a fine bay, with good anchorage, in eighteen fathoms water. The points of the

ſcribed; but the hills afterwards roſe with a leſs gradual aſcent, which brought them to ſome extenſive plantations, conſiſting of the *taro* or eddy root, and ſweet potatoes, with plants of the cloth-tree. Both the *taro* and the ſweet potatoes are here planted at the diſtance of four feet from each other. The potatoes are earthed up almoſt to the top of the ſtalk, with a proper quantity of light mould. The *taro* is left bare to the root, and the mould round it is put in the form of a baſon, for the purpoſe of holding the rain-water; this root requiring a certain degree of moiſture. At the Friendly and Society Iſles, the *taro* was conſtantly planted in low and moiſt ſituations, and generally in thoſe places where there was the conveniency of a rivulet to flood it. This mode of culture was conſidered as abſolutely neceſſary; but we now found that this root, with the precaution before-mentioned, ſucceeds equally well in a more dry ſituation. It was, indeed, remarked by all of us, that the *taro* of the Sandwich Iſlands was the beſt we had ever taſted.

The walls, by which theſe plantations are ſeparated from each other, are compoſed of the looſe burnt ſtones, which are met with in clearing the ground; and, being totally concealed by ſugar-canes, that are planted cloſe on each ſide, form the moſt beautiful fences that can be imagined.

Our

Our party ſtopped for the night at the ſecond hut they obſerved among the plantations, where they ſuppoſed themſelves to be ſix or ſeven miles diſtant from our ſhips. The proſpect from this ſpot was deſcribed by them as very delightful: they had a view of our veſſels in the bay before them; to the left they ſaw a continued range of villages, interſperſed with groves of coçoa-nut-trees, ſpreading along the ſhore; a thick wood extending itſelf behind them; and, to the right, a very conſiderable extent of ground, laid out with great regularity in well-cultivated plantations, diſplayed itſelf to their view. Near this ſpot the natives pointed out to them, at a diſtance from every other dwelling, the reſidence of a hermit, who, they ſaid, had, in the former part of his life, been a great chief and warrior, but had long ago retired from the ſea-coaſt of the iſland, and now never quitted the environs of his cottage. As they approached him, they proſtrated themſelves, and afterwards preſented him with ſome proviſions. His behaviour was eaſy, frank, and cheerful. He teſtified little aſtoniſhment at the ſight of our people, and though preſſed to accept of ſome European curioſities, he thought proper to decline the offer, and ſoon withdrew to his cottage. Our party repreſented him as by far the moſt aged perſon they had ever ſeen, judging him to be, at a moderate computation, upwards of a hundred years of age.

As

As our people had ſuppoſed that the mountain was not more than ten or a dozen miles diſtant from the bay, and conſequently expected to reach it with eaſe early the following morning, they were now greatly ſurpriſed to find the diſtance ſcarce perceivably diminiſhed. This circumſtance, with the uninhabited ſtate of the country, which they were on the point of entering, rendering it neceſſary to provide a ſupply of proviſions, they diſpatched one of their conductors back to the village for that purpoſe. Whilſt they waited his return, they were joined by ſeveral of Kaoo's ſervants, whom that generous old man had ſent after them, loaded with refreſhments, and fully authorized, as their route lay through his grounds, to demand, and take away with them whatever they might want.

Great was the ſurpriſe of our travellers, on finding the cold here ſo intenſe. But, as they had no thermometer with them, they could only form their judgment of it from their feelings; which, from the warm atmoſphere they had quitted, muſt have been a very fallacious method of judging. They found it, however, ſo cold, that they could ſcarce get any ſleep, and the iſlanders could not ſleep at all; both parties being diſturbed, during the whole night, by continual coughing. As they, at this time, could not be at any very great height, their diſtance from the ſea being no more than ſix or ſeven miles, and

part of the road on a very moderate aſcent, this uncommon degree of cold muſt be attributed to the eaſterly wind blowing freſh over the ſnowy mountains.

They proceeded on their journey early the next morning, and filled their calibaſhes at a well of excellent water, ſituate about half a mile from their hut. After they had paſſed the plantations, they arrived at a thick wood, which they entered by a path that had been made for the convenience of the iſlanders, who frequently repair thither for the purpoſe of catching birds, as well as procuring the wild or horſe-plantain. Their progreſs now became extremely ſlow, and was attended with great labour; for the ground was either ſwampy, or covered with large ſtones; the path narrow, and often interrupted by trees lying acroſs it, which they were obliged to climb over, as the thickneſs of the underwood, on each ſide, rendered it impracticable to paſs round them. They ſaw, in theſe woods, pieces of white cloth fixed on poles, at ſmall diſtances, which they imagined were land-marks for the diviſion of property, as they only obſerved them where the wild plantains grew. The trees were of the ſame kind with the ſpice-tree of New Holland; they were ſtraight and lofty, and their circumference was from two to four feet.

Our party having advanced nine or ten miles in the wood, had the mortification of finding

themſelves, ſuddenly, within ſight of the ſea, and not very far from it; the path having turned off imperceptibly to the ſouth, and carried them to the right of the mountain, which it was their intention to reach. Their diſappointment was conſiderably heightened by the uncertainty under which they now were with reſpect to its true bearings, as they could not, at preſent, gain a view of it from the top of the higheſt trees. They, therefore, thought proper to walk back ſix or ſeven miles to an unoccupied hut, where they had left two of their own people, and three of the natives, with the ſmall remnant of their proviſions. Here they paſſed the ſecond night, during which the air was ſo extremely ſharp, that, by the morning, their guides were all gone off, except one.

Being now in want of proviſions, which laid them under a neceſſity of returning to ſome of the cultivated parts of the iſland, they left the wood by the ſame path by which they had entered it. When they arrived at the plantations, they were ſurrounded by the iſlanders, from whom they purchaſed a freſh ſupply of neceſſaries; and prevailed upon two of them to accompany them as guides, in the room of thoſe who had gone away. Having procured the beſt information they could poſſibly obtain, with regard to the direction of their road, the party, who were now nine in number, marched for about half a dozen miles

along the ſkirts of the wood, and then entered it again by a path leading towards the eaſt. They paſſed, for the firſt three miles, through a foreſt of lofty ſpice-trees, which grew on a rich loam. At the back of theſe trees they met with an equal extent of low ſhrubby trees, together with a conſiderable quantity of thick under-wood, upon a bottom of looſe burnt ſtones. This led them to another foreſt of ſpice-trees, and the ſame rich browniſh ſoil, which was again ſucceeded by a barren ridge of a ſimilar kind with the former. Theſe ridges, as far as they could be ſeen, appeared to run parallel with the ſea-ſhore, and to have Mouna Roa for their centre.

As they paſſed through the woods they found many unfiniſhed canoes, and huts in ſeveral places; but they ſaw none of the inhabitants. After they had penetrated almoſt three miles into the ſecond wood, they arrived at two huts, where they ſtopped, being greatly fatigued with the day's journey, in the courſe of which they had walked, according to their own computation, at leaſt twenty miles. Having found no ſprings from the time they quitted the plantations, they had greatly ſuffered from the violence of their thirſt; in conſequence of which they were obliged, before the evening came on, to ſeparate into ſmall parties, and go in queſt of water. They, at laſt, met with ſome that had been left by rain in the bottom of a half-finiſhed canoe; which, though

though of a reddiſh colour, was by no means unwelcome to them.

During the night, the cold was more intenſe than before; and though they had taken care to wrap themſelves up in mats and clothes of the country, and to keep a large fire between the two huts, they could get but very little ſleep, and were under the neceſſity of walking about for the greateſt part of the night. Their elevation was now, in all probability, pretty conſiderable, as the ground, over which their journey lay, had been generally on the aſcent.

The next morning, which was the 29th, they ſet out early, with an intention of making their laſt and greateſt effort to reach the ſnowy mountain; but their ſpirits were conſiderably depreſſed, on finding that the miſerable pittance of water, which they had diſcovered the preceding night, was expended. The path, which reached no farther than where canoes had been built, being now terminated, they were obliged to make their way as well as they could; frequently climbing up into the moſt lofty trees, to explore the ſurrounding country. They arrived, about eleven o'clock, at a ridge of burnt ſtones, from the top of which they had a proſpect of the Mouna Roa, which then appeared to be at the diſtance of between twelve and fourteen miles from them.

They now entered into a conſultation, whether they ſhould proceed any further, or reſt

contented with the view they now had of the ſnowy mountain. Since the path had ceaſed, their road had become highly fatiguing, and was growing ſtill more ſo, every ſtep they advanced. The ground was almoſt every where broken into deep fiſſures, which, being ſlightly covered with moſs, made them ſtumble almoſt continually; and the intervening ſpace conſiſted of a ſurface of looſe burnt ſtones, which broke under their feet. Into ſome of theſe fiſſures they threw ſtones, which ſeemed, from the noiſe they made, to fall to a conſiderable depth; and the ground ſounded hollow as they walked upon it. Beſides theſe circumſtances, which diſcouraged them from proceeding, they found their conductors ſo averſe to going on, that they had reaſon to think they would not be prevailed on to remain out another night. They, therefore, at length came to a determination of returning to the ſhips, after taking a ſurvey of the country from the higheſt trees they could find. From this elevation, they perceived themſelves ſurrounded with wood towards the ſea; they were unable to diſtinguiſh, in the horizon, the ſky from the water; and betwixt them and the ſnowy mountain, was a valley of about eight miles in breadth.

The travellers paſſed this night at a hut in the ſecond foreſt; and the following day, before noon, they had paſſed the firſt wood, and found themſelves nine or ten miles to the north-eaſt of the

ſhips, towards which they marched through the plantations. As they walked along, they did not obſerve a ſpot of ground, that was ſuſceptible of improvement, left unplanted; and, indeed, the country, from their account, could ſcarcely be cultivated to greater advantage for the purpoſes of the natives.

They were ſurpriſed at ſeeing ſeveral fields of hay; and, upon their enquiry, to what particular uſe it was applied, they were informed, that it was intended to cover the grounds where the young *taro* grew, in order to preſerve them from being ſcorched by the rays of the ſun. They obſerved, among the plantations, a few huts ſcattered about, which afforded occaſional ſhelter to the labourers: but they did not ſee any villages at a greater diſtance from the ſea than four or five miles. Near one of them, which was ſituated about four miles from the bay, they diſcovered a cave, forty fathoms in length, three in breadth, and of the ſame height. It was open at each end; its ſides were fluted, as if wrought with a chiſſel; and the ſurface was glazed over, perhaps by the action of fire.

Having thus related the principal circumſtances that occurred in the expedition to the ſnowy mountain at Owhyhee, we ſhall now proceed to deſcribe the other iſlands of this groupe.

That which is next in ſize, and neareſt in ſituation to Owhyhee, is Mowee. It ſtands at the

diſtance of eight leagues north-north-weſt from Owhyhee, and is one hundred and forty geographical miles in circuit. It is divided by a low iſthmus into two circular peninſulas, of which that to the eaſtward is named Whamadooa, and is twice as large as that to the weſt, called Owhyrookoo. The mountains in both riſe to a very great height, as we were able to ſee them at the diſtance of above thirty leagues. The northern ſhores, like thoſe of the iſle of Owhyhee, afford no ſoundings; and the country bears the ſame aſpect of fertility and verdure. The eaſt point of Mowee is in the latitude of 20° 50′ north, and in the longitude of 204° 4′ eaſt.

To the ſouthward, between Mowee and the adjacent iſlands, we found regular depths with one hundred and fifty fathoms, over a bottom of ſand. From the weſtern point, which is rather low, runs a ſhoal, extending towards the iſland of Ranai, to a conſiderable diſtance; and to the ſouth of this, is an extenſive bay, with a ſandy beach, ſhaded with cocoa-trees. It is not improbable, that good anchorage might be met with here, with ſhelter from the prevailing winds; and that the beach affords a commodious landing-place. The country further back is very romantic in its appearance. The hills riſe almoſt perpendicularly, exhibiting a variety of peaked forms; and their ſteep ſides, as well as the deep chaſms between them, are covered with trees,

among

among which thoſe of the bread-fruit principally abound. The ſummits of theſe hills are perfectly bare, and of a reddiſh brown hue. The natives informed us, that there was a harbour to the ſouth of the eaſtern point, which they aſſerted was ſuperior to that of Karakakooa; and we alſo heard that there was another harbour, named Keepookeepoo, on the north-weſtern ſide.

Ranai is about nine miles diſtant from Mowee and Morotoi, and is ſituate to the ſouth-weſt of the paſſage between thoſe two iſles. The country, towards the ſouth, is elevated and craggy; but the other parts of the iſland had a better appearance, and ſeemed to be well inhabited. It abounds in roots, ſuch as ſweet potatoes, *taro*, and yams; but produces very few plantains, and bread-fruit-trees. The ſouth point of Ranai is in the latitude of 20° 46′ north, and in the longitude of 203° 8′ eaſt.

Morotoi lies at the diſtance of two leagues and a half to the weſt-north-weſt of Mowee. Its ſouth-weſtern coaſt, which was the only part of it we approached, is very low; but the land behind riſes to a conſiderable elevation; and, at the diſtance from which we had a view of it, appeared to be deſtitute of wood. Yams are its principal produce; and it may probably contain freſh water. The coaſt, on the ſouthern and weſtern ſides of the iſland, forms ſeveral bays, that promiſe a tolerable ſhelter from the trade

winds. The weſt point of Morotoi is in the longitude of 202° 46′ eaſt, and in the latitude of 21° 10′ north.

Tahoorowa is a ſmall iſland ſituated off the ſouth-weſtern part of Mowee, from which it is nine miles diſtant. It is deſtitute of wood, and its ſoil ſeems to be ſandy and unfertile. Its latitude is 20° 38′ north, and its longitude 203° 27′ eaſt. Between it and Mowee ſtands the little iſland of Morrotinnee, which has no inhabitants.

Woahoo lies about ſeven leagues to the north-weſt of Morotoi. As far as we were enabled to judge, from the appearance of the north-weſtern and north-eaſtern parts (for we had not an opportunity of ſeeing the ſouthern ſide) it is by far the fineſt of all the Sandwich Iſlands. The verdure of the hills, the variety of wood and lawn, and fertile well-cultivated vallies, which the whole face of the country preſented to view, could not be exceeded. Having already deſcribed the bay in which we anchored, formed by the northern and weſtern extremes, it remains for us to obſerve, that, in the bight of the bay, to the ſouthward of our anchoring-place, we met with foul rocky ground, about two miles from the ſhore. If the ground tackling of a ſhip ſhould happen to be weak, and the wind blow with violence from the north, to which quarter the road is entirely open, this circumſtance might be attended with ſome degree of danger; but, provided the cables were

good,

good, there would be no great hazard, as the ground from the anchoring-place, which is oppoſite the valley through which the river runs, to the northern point, conſiſts of a fine ſand. The latitude of our anchoring-place is 21° 43′ north, and the longitude 202° 9′ eaſt.

Atooi is about twenty-five leagues to the north-weſt of Woahoo. Towards the north-eaſt and north-weſt, the face of the country is ragged and broken; but, to the ſouthward, it is more even; the hills riſe from the ſea-ſide with a gentle acclivity, and, at a little diſtance back, are covered with wood. Its produce is the ſame with that of the other iſlands of this cluſter; but its inhabitants greatly excel the people of all the neighbouring iſlands in the management of their plantations. In the low grounds, contiguous to the bay wherein we anchored, theſe plantations were regularly divided by deep ditches; the fences were formed with a neatneſs approaching to elegance, and the roads through them were finiſhed in ſuch a manner, as would have reflected credit even on an European engineer. The longitude of Wymoa Bay, in this iſland, is 200° 20′ eaſt, and its latitude 21° 57′ north.

Oneeheow is five or ſix leagues to the weſtward of Atooi. Its eaſtern coaſt is high, and riſes with abruptneſs from the ſea; but the other parts of the iſland conſiſt of low ground, except a round bluff head on the ſouth-eaſtern point. It produces

duces plenty of yams, and of the ſweet root called *tee*. The anchoring-place at this iſland lies in the latitude of 21° 50′ north, and in the longitude of 199° 45′ eaſt.

Oreehoua and Tahoora are two little iſlands, ſituate in the neighbourhood of Oneeheow. The former is an elevated hummock, connected with the northern extreme of Oneeheow, by a reef of coral rocks. Its latitude is 22° 2′ north, and its longitude 199° 52′ eaſt. The latter ſtands to the ſouth-eaſt, and is uninhabited: its longitude is 199° 36′ eaſt, and its latitude 21° 43′ north.

The climate of the Sandwich Iſles is, perhaps, rather more temperate than that of the Weſt India iſlands, which are in the ſame latitude; but the difference is very inconſiderable. The thermometer, on ſhore near Karakakooa Bay, never roſe to a greater height than 88°, and that but one day: its mean height, at twelve o'clock, was 83°. Its mean height at noon, in Wymoa Bay, was 76°, and, when out at ſea, 75°. In the iſland of Jamaica, the mean height of the thermometer, at twelve o'clock, is about 86°; at ſea, 80°.

Whether theſe iſlands are ſubject to the ſame violent winds and hurricanes with the Weſt Indies, we could not aſcertain, as we were not here during any of the tempeſtuous months. However, as no veſtiges of their effects were any where to be ſeen, and as the iſlanders gave us no poſitive teſtimony of the fact, it is probable, that, in this particular,

lar, they reſemble the Friendly and Society Iſles, which are, in a great degree, free from ſuch tremendous viſitations.

There was a greater quantity of rain, particularly in the interior parts, during the four winter months that we continued among theſe iſlanders, than commonly falls in the Weſt Indies in the dry ſeaſon. We generally obſerved clouds collecting round the ſummits of the hills, and producing rain to leeward; but, after the wind has ſeparated them from the land, they diſperſe, and are loſt, and others ſupply their place. This occurred daily at Owhyhee; the mountainous parts being uſually enveloped in a cloud; ſhowers ſucceſſively falling in the inland country; with a clear ſky, and fine weather, in the neighbourhood of the ſhore.

The winds were, for the moſt part, from eaſt-ſouth-eaſt to north-eaſt. In the harbour of Karakakooa we had every day and night a ſea and land breeze. The currents ſometimes ſet to windward, and at other times to leeward, without the leaſt regularity. They did not ſeem to be directed by the winds, nor by any other cauſe that we can aſſign: they often ſet to windward againſt a freſh breeze.

The tides are exceedingly regular, ebbing and flowing ſix hours each. The flood-tide comes from the eaſt, and, at the full and change of the moon, it is high-water at three quarters of an hour

hour after three o'clock. Their greateſt riſe is two feet ſeven inches.

With reſpect to the quadrupeds of theſe iſlands, they are confined to three ſorts, namely, hogs, dogs, and rats. The dogs are of the ſame ſpecies with thoſe we ſaw at Otaheite, having pricked ears, long backs, and ſhort crooked legs. We did not obſerve any variety in them, except in their ſkins; ſome being perfectly ſmooth, and others having long rough hair. They are about as large as a common turnſpit, and ſeem to be extremely ſluggiſh in their nature; though this may, probably, be more owing to the manner in which they are treated, than to their natural diſpoſition. They are generally fed with the hogs, and left to herd with thoſe animals; and we do not recollect a ſingle inſtance of a dog being made a companion here, as is the cuſtom in Europe. Indeed, the practice of eating them ſeems to be an inſuperable bar to their being admitted into ſociety; and as there are no beaſts of prey, nor objects of chace, in theſe iſlands, the ſocial qualities of the dog, its attachment, fidelity, and ſagacity, will, in all probability, remain unknown to the natives.

It did not appear that the dogs in the Sandwich Iſlands were near ſo numerous, in proportion, as at Otaheite. But, on the other hand, they have a much greater plenty of hogs, and the breed is of a larger kind. We procured from them

them an amazing ſupply of proviſions of this ſort. We were upwards of three months, either cruiſing off the coaſt, or in harbour at Owhyhee; during all which time the crews of both ſhips had conſtantly a large allowance of freſh pork, inſomuch that our conſumption of that article was computed at about ſixty puncheons of five hundred weight each. Beſides this quantity, and the extraordinary waſte, which, amidſt ſuch abundance, could not be entirely prevented, ſixty more puncheons were ſalted for ſea ſtore. The greater part of this ſupply was drawn from the iſle of Owhyhee alone; and yet we did not perceive that it was at all exhauſted, or even that the plenty had decreaſed.

The birds of theſe iſlands are numerous, though the variety is not great. Some of them may vie with thoſe of any country in point of beauty. There are four ſpecies that ſeem to belong to the *trochili*, or honey-ſuckers of Linnæus. One of them is ſomewhat larger than a bullfinch; its colour is a gloſſy black, and the thighs and rump-vent are of a deep yellow. The natives call it *booboo*. Another is of a very bright ſcarlet; its wings are black, with a white edge, and its tail is black. It is named *eeeeve* by the inhabitants. The third is variegated with brown, yellow, and red, and ſeems to be either a young bird, or a variety of the preceding. The fourth is entirely green, with a yellow tinge, and is called *akaiearooa*.

There

There is alſo a ſmall bird of the fly-catcher kind; a ſpecies of thruſh, with a greyiſh breaſt; and a rail, with very ſhort wings, and no tail. Ravens are met with here, but they are extremely ſcarce; they are of a dark brown colour, inclining to black, and their note is different from that of the European raven.

We found here two ſmall birds, that were very common, and both of which were of one *genus*. One of theſe was red, and was uſually obſerved about the cocoa-trees, from whence it ſeemed to derive a conſiderable part of its ſubſiſtence. The other was of a green colour. Both had long tongues, which were ciliated, or fringed at the tip. A bird with a yellow head was likewiſe very common here: from the ſtructure of its beak, our people called it a parroquet: it, however, does not belong to that tribe, but bears a great reſemblance to the *lexia flavicans*, or yellowiſh croſs-bill of Linnæus. Here are alſo owls, curlews, petrels, and gannets; plovers of two ſpecies, one nearly the ſame as our whiſtling plover; a large white pigeon; the common water-hen; and a long-tailed bird, which is of a black colour, and the vent and feathers under the wings yellow.

The vegetable produce of the Sandwich Iſles is not very different from that of the other iſlands of the Pacific Ocean. We have already obſerved, that the *taro* root, as here cultivated, was ſuperior

to any we had before taſted. The bread-fruit-trees thrive here, not indeed in ſuch abundance as at Otaheite, but they produce twice as much fruit as they do on the rich plains of that iſland. The trees are nearly of the ſame height; but the branches ſhoot out from the trunk conſiderably lower, and with greater luxuriance of vegetation. The ſugar-canes of theſe iſlands grow to an extraordinary ſize. One of them was brought to us at Atooi, whoſe circumference was eleven inches and a quarter; and it had fourteen feet eatable. At Oneeheow we ſaw ſome large brown roots, from ſix to ten pounds in weight, reſembling a yam in ſhape. The juice, of which they yield a great quantity, is very ſweet, and is an excellent *ſuccedaneum* for ſugar. The natives are exceedingly fond of it, and make uſe of it as an article of their common diet; and our people likewiſe found it very palatable and wholeſome. Not being able to procure the leaves of this vegetable, we could not aſcertain to what ſpecies of plant it belonged; but we ſuppoſed it to be the root of ſome kind of fern.

CHAP.

## CHAP. VII.

*General Account of the Sandwich Iſles continued—Origin of the Natives—Their Perſons deſcribed—Inſtances of Deformity—Pernicious Conſequences ariſing from the immoderate Uſe of the Ava—Population of theſe Iſlands—Diſpoſition and Manners of the Inhabitants—Reſtraints impoſed on their Women—Their Ingenuity and Docility—Mr. King's Reaſons for ſuppoſing that they are not Cannibals at preſent—Methods of wearing their Hair—Various Ornaments—Dreſs of the Men—Feathered Cloaks and Helmets—Dreſs of the Women—A beautiful Kind of Ruff deſcribed—Other Ornaments—Villages—Houſes—Food—Occupations—Diverſions—Their Fondneſs for Gaming—Aſtoniſhing Dexterity in Swimming—Canoes—Arts and Manufactures—Mode of painting Cloth—Beauty of their Mats—Their Fiſhing-Hooks—Cordage—Various Uſes of Gourd-Shells—Salt-Pans—Weapons.*

THE natives of the Sandwich Iſles are doubtleſs of the ſame extraction with the inhabitants of the Friendly and Society Iſlands, of New-Zealand, the Marqueſas, and Eaſter Iſland; a race which poſſeſſes all the known lands between the longitudes of 167° and 260° eaſt, and between the latitudes of 47° ſouth, and 22° north. This fact,

fact, extraordinary as it is, is not only evinced by the general reſemblance of their perſons, and the great ſimilarity of their manners and cuſtoms, but ſeems to be eſtabliſhed, beyond all controverſy, by the identity of their language. It may not, perhaps, be very difficult to conjecture, from what continent they originally emigrated, and by what ſteps they have diffuſed themſelves over ſo immenſe a ſpace. They bear ſtrong marks of affinity to ſome of the Indian tribes, which inhabit the Ladrones and Caroline Iſles; and the ſame affinity and reſemblance, may alſo be traced among the Malays and the Battas. At what particular time theſe migrations happened is leſs eaſy to aſcertain; the period, in all probability, was not very late, as they are very populous, and have no tradition reſpecting their own origin, but what is wholly fabulous; though, on the other hand, the ſimplicity which is ſtill prevalent in their manners and habits of life, and the unadulterated ſtate of their general language, ſeem to demonſtrate, that it could not have been at any very remote period.

The Sandwich Iſlanders, in general, exceed the middle ſize, and are well made. They walk in a very graceful manner, run with conſiderable agility, and are capable of enduring a great degree of fatigue: but, upon the whole, the men are inferior, with reſpect to activity and ſtrength, to the inhabitants of the Friendly Iſlands, and

the women are leſs delicate in the formation of their limbs than the Otaheitean females. Their complexion is ſomewhat darker than that of the Otaheiteans; and they are not altogether ſo handſome in their perſons as the natives of the Society Iſles. Many of both ſexes, however, had fine open countenances *; and the women, in particular, had white well-ſet teeth, good eyes, and an engaging ſweetneſs and ſenſibility of look.

The hair of theſe people is of a browniſh black, neither uniformly curling, like that of the African negroes, nor uniformly ſtraight, as among the Indians of America; but varying, in this reſpect, like the hair of Europeans. There is one ſtriking peculiarity in the features of every part of this great nation; which is, that, even in the moſt handſome faces, there is always obſervable, a fulneſs of the noſtril, without any flatneſs or ſpreading of the noſe, that diſtinguiſhes them from the inhabitants of Europe. It is not wholly improbable, that this may be the effect of their cuſtomary method of ſalutation, which is performed by preſſing together the extremities of their noſes.

The ſame ſuperiority that we generally obſerved at other iſlands in the perſons of the *Erees*, is likewiſe found here. Thoſe that were ſeen by us were perfectly well formed; whereas the lower

* The annexed repreſentation of a man of the Sandwich Iſles, was taken from a portrait of our friend Kaneena.

claſs

claſs of people, beſides their general inferiority, are ſubject to all the variety of figure and make, that is met with in the populace of other parts of the world.

There are more frequent inſtances of deformity here, than in any of the other iſlands we viſited. While we were cruiſing off Owhyhee, two dwarfs came on board; one of whom was an old man, of the height of four feet two inches, but very well proportioned; and the other was a woman, nearly of the ſame ſtature. We afterwards ſaw, among the natives, three who were hump-backed, and a young man who had been deſtitute of hands and feet, from the very moment of his birth. Squinting is alſo common among them; and a man, who, they told us, had been born blind, was brought to us for the purpoſe of being cured. Beſides theſe particular defects, they are, in general, extremely ſubject to boils and ulcers, which ſome of us aſcribed to the great quantity of ſalt they uſually eat with their fiſh and fleſh. Though the *Erees* are free from theſe complaints, many of them experience ſtill more dreadful effects from the too frequent uſe of the *ava*. Thoſe who were the moſt affected by it, had their eyes red and inflamed, their limbs emaciated, their bodies covered with a whitiſh ſcurf, and their whole frame trembling and paralytic, attended with a diſability of raiſing their heads.

Though it does not appear that this drug univerſally ſhortens life, (for Terreeoboo, Kaoo, and ſeveral other chiefs, were far advanced in years) yet it invariably brings on a premature and decrepid old age. It is a fortunate circumſtance for the people, that the uſe of it is made a peculiar privilege of the chiefs. The young ſon of Terreeoboo, who did not exceed twelve or thirteen years of age, frequently boaſted of his being admitted to drink *ava*; and ſhewed us, with marks of exultation, a ſmall ſpot in his ſide that was beginning to grow ſcaly.

When Captain Cook firſt viſited the Society Iſles, this pernicious drug was very little known among them. In his ſecond voyage, he found it greatly in vogue at Ulietea; but it had ſtill gained little ground at Otaheite. During the laſt time we were there, the havock it had made was almoſt incredible, inſomuch that Captain Cook ſcarce recognized many of his former acquaintances. It is alſo conſtantly drank by the chiefs of the Friendly Iſles, but ſo much diluted with water, that it ſcarcely produces any bad conſequences. At Atooi, likewiſe, it is uſed with great moderation; and the chiefs of that iſland are, on this account, a much finer ſet of men, than thoſe of the neighbouring iſlands. It was remarked by us, that, upon diſcontinuing the uſe of this root, its noxious effects quickly wore off. We prevailed upon our friends Kaoo and

Kaireekeea, to abſtain from it; and they recovered ſurpriſingly during the ſhort time we afterwards remained among them.

To form any probable conjectures with regard to the population of iſlands, with many parts of which we have but an imperfect acquaintance, may be thought highly difficult. There are two circumſtances, however, which remove much of this objection. One is, that the interior parts of the country are almoſt entirely uninhabited: if, therefore, the number of thoſe who inhabit the parts adjoining to the coaſt, be aſcertained, the whole will be determined with ſome degree of accuracy. The other circumſtance is, that there are no towns of any conſiderable extent, the houſes of the iſlanders being pretty equally ſcattered in ſmall villages round all their coaſts. On theſe grounds we ſhall venture at a rough calculation of the number of perſons in this cluſter of iſlands.

Karakakooa bay, in Owhyhee, is about three miles in extent, and comprehends four villages of about eighty houſes each, upon an average, in all three hundred and twenty; beſides many ſtraggling habitations, which may make the whole amount to three hundred and fifty. If we allow ſix people to each houſe, the country about the bay will then contain two thouſand one hundred perſons. To theſe we may add fifty families, or three hundred ſouls, which we imagine

to be nearly the number employed among the plantations in the interior parts of the iſland; making, in all, two thouſand four hundred. If this number be applied to the whole coaſt round the iſland, a quarter being deducted for the uninhabited parts, it will be found to contain a hundred and fifty thouſand perſons. The other Sandwich Iſlands, by the ſame method of calculation, will appear to contain the following number of inhabitants: Mowee, ſixty-five thouſand four hundred; Atooi, fifty-four thouſand; Morotoi, thirty-ſix thouſand; Woahoo, ſixty thouſand two hundred; Ranai, twenty thouſand four hundred; Oneeheow, ten thouſand; and Oreehoua, four thouſand. Theſe numbers, including the hundred and fifty thouſand in Owhyhee, will amount to four hundred thouſand. In this computation we have by no means exceeded the truth in the total amount.

It muſt be acknowledged, notwithſtanding the great loſs we ſuſtained from the ſudden reſentment and violence of theſe iſlanders, that they are of a very mild and affectionate diſpoſition, equally remote from the diſtant gravity and reſerve of the natives of the Friendly Iſles, and the extreme volatility of the Otaheiteans. They ſeem to live in the greateſt friendſhip and harmony with each other. Thoſe women who had children, ſhewed a remarkable affection for them, and paid them a particular and conſtant attention;

and

and the men, with a willingneſs that did honour to their feelings, frequently afforded their aſſiſtance in thoſe domeſtic employments. We muſt, however, remark, that they are greatly inferior to the inhabitants of the other iſlands, in that beſt criterion of civilized manners, the reſpect paid to the female ſex. Here the women are not only deprived of the privilege of eating with the men, but are forbidden to feed on the beſt ſorts of proviſions. Turtle, pork, ſeveral kinds of fiſh, and ſome ſpecies of plantains, are denied them; and we were informed, that a girl received a violent beating, for having eaten, while ſhe was on board one of our ſhips, a prohibited article of food. With regard to their domeſtic life, they ſeem to live almoſt wholly by themſelves, and meet with little attention from the men, though no inſtances of perſonal ill-treatment were obſerved by us.

We have already had occaſion to mention the great kindneſs and hoſpitality, with which they treated us. Whenever we went aſhore, there was a continual ſtruggle who ſhould be moſt forward in offering little preſents for our acceptance, bringing proviſions and refreſhments, or teſtifying ſome other mark of reſpect. The aged perſons conſtantly received us with tears of joy, appeared to be highly gratified with being permitted to touch us, and were frequently drawing compariſons between us and themſelves, with

marks of extreme humility. The young women, likewiſe, were exceedingly kind and engaging, and attached themſelves to us, without reſerve, till they perceived, notwithſtanding all our endeavours to prevent it, that they had cauſe to repent of our acquaintance. It muſt, however, be obſerved, that theſe females were, in all probability, of the inferior claſs; for we ſaw very few women of rank during our continuance here.

Theſe people, in point of natural capacity, are, by no means, below the common ſtandard of the human race. The excellence of their manufactures, and their improvements in agriculture, are doubtleſs adequate to their ſituation and natural advantages. The eagerneſs of curioſity, with which they uſed to attend the armourer's forge, and the various expedients which they had invented, even before our departure from theſe iſlands, for working the iron obtained from us, into ſuch forms as were beſt calculated for their purpoſes, were ſtrong indications of docility and ingenuity. Our unhappy friend, Kaneena, was endowed with a remarkable quickneſs of conception, and a great degree of judicious curioſity. He was extremely inquiſitive with reſpect to our manners and cuſtoms. He enquired after our ſovereign; the form of our government; the mode of conſtructing our ſhips; the productions of our country; our numbers; our method of building houſes; whether we waged any wars;

with

with whom, on what occaſions, and in what particular manner they were carried on; who was our deity; beſides many other queſtions of a ſimilar import, which ſeemed to indicate a comprehenſive underſtanding. We obſerved two inſtances of perſons diſordered in their ſenſes; the one a woman at Oneeheow, the other a man at Owhyhee. From the extraordinary reſpect and attention paid to them, it appeared, that the opinion of their being divinely inſpired, which prevails among moſt of the oriental nations, is alſo countenanced here.

It is highly probable, that the practice of feeding on the bodies of enemies, was originally prevalent in all the iſlands of the Pacific Ocean, though it is not known, by poſitive and deciſive evidence, to exiſt in any of them, except New-Zealand. The offering up human victims, which is manifeſtly a relique of this barbarous cuſtom, ſtill univerſally obtains among theſe iſlanders; and it is not difficult to conceive why the inhabitants of New-Zealand ſhould retain the repaſt, which was, perhaps, the concluding part of theſe horrid rites, for a longer period than the reſt of their tribe, who were ſituated in more fertile regions. As the Sandwich iſlanders, both in their perſons and diſpoſition, bear a nearer reſemblance to the New-Zealanders, than to any other people of this very extenſive race, Mr. Anderſon was ſtrongly inclined to ſuſpect, that, like them, they

are ſtill cannibals. The evidence, which induced him to entertain this opinion, has been already laid down in the tenth chapter of the third book; but, as Mr. King had great doubts of the juſtneſs of his concluſions, we ſhall mention the grounds on which he ventured to differ from him. With regard to the intelligence received on this head from the natives themſelves, it may not be improper to obſerve, that moſt of the officers on board took great pains to inquire into ſo curious a circumſtance; and that, except in the inſtances above referred to, the iſlanders invariably denied that any ſuch practice exiſted among them.

Though Mr. Anderſon's ſuperior knowledge of the language of thoſe people ought certainly to give conſiderable weight to his judgment, yet when he examined the man who had the little parcel containing a piece of ſalted fleſh, Mr. King, who was preſent on that occaſion, was ſtrongly of opinion, that the ſigns made uſe of by the iſlander intimated nothing more, than that it was deſigned to be eaten, and that it was very agreeable or wholeſome to the ſtomach. In this ſentiment Mr. King was confirmed, by a circumſtance of which he was informed, after the deceaſe of his ingenious friend Mr. Anderſon, namely, that moſt of the inhabitants of theſe iſlands carried about with them a ſmall piece of raw pork, well ſalted, either put in a calibaſh, or wrapped up in ſome cloth, and faſtened round

the

the waiſt: this they eſteemed a great delicacy, and would frequently taſte it. With regard to the confuſion the lad was in, (for his age did not exceed ſixteen or eighteen years) no perſon could have been ſurpriſed at it, who had been witneſs of the earneſt and eager manner in which Mr. Anderſon interrogated him.

Mr. King found it leſs eaſy to controvert the argument deduced from the uſe of the inſtrument made with ſhark's teeth, which is of a ſimilar form with that uſed by the New-Zealanders for cutting up the bodies of their enemies. Though he believed it to be an undoubted fact, that they never make uſe of this inſtrument in cutting the fleſh of other animals, yet, as the practice of ſacrificing human victims, and of burning the bodies of the ſlain, ſtill prevails here, he conſidered it as not altogether improbable, that the uſe of this knife (if it may be ſo denominated) is retained in thoſe ceremonies. He was, upon the whole, inclined to imagine, and particularly from the laſt-mentioned circumſtance, that the horrible cuſtom of devouring human fleſh has but lately ceaſed in theſe and other iſlands of the Pacific Ocean. Omai acknowledged, that his countrymen, inſtigated by the fury of revenge, would ſometimes tear with their teeth the fleſh of their ſlain enemies; but he peremptorily denied that they ever eat it. The denial is a ſtrong indication that the practice has ceaſed; for in New-

Zealand,

Zealand, where it is ſtill prevalent, the natives never ſcrupled to confeſs it.

The Sandwich Iſlanders, almoſt univerſally, permit their beards to grow. There were, however, a few who cut off their beard entirely, among whom was the aged king; and others wore it only on their upper lip. The ſame variety that is found among the other iſlanders of this ocean, with reſpect to the mode of wearing the hair, is likewiſe obſervable here. They have, beſides, a faſhion which ſeems to be peculiar to themſelves: they cut it cloſe on each ſide of their heads, down to their ears, and leave a ridge, of the breadth of a ſmall hand, extending from the forehead to the neck; which, when the hair is pretty thick and curling, reſembles, in point of form, the creſt of the helmet of an ancient warrior. Some of them wear great quantities of falſe hair, flowing in long ringlets down their backs; while others tie it into one round bunch on the upper part of their heads, nearly as large as the head itſelf; and ſome into ſix or ſeven ſeparate bunches. They uſe, for the purpoſe of daubing or ſmearing their hair, a greyiſh clay, mixed with ſhells reduced to powder, which they keep in balls, and chew into a ſort of paſte, whenever they intend to make uſe of it. This compoſition preſerves the ſmoothneſs of the hair, and changes it, in proceſs of time, to a pale yellow.

Neck-

Necklaces, conſiſting of ſtrings of ſmall variegated ſhells, are worn by both men and women. They alſo wear an ornament, about two inches in length, and half an inch in breadth, ſhaped like the handle of a cup, and made of ſtone, wood, or ivory, extremely well poliſhed: this is hung round the neck by fine threads of twiſted hair, which are ſometimes doubled an hundred fold. Some of them, inſtead of this ornament, wear a ſmall human figure on their breaſt, formed of bone, and ſuſpended in a ſimilar manner.

Both ſexes make uſe of the fan, or fly-flap, by way of uſe and ornament. The moſt common ſort is compoſed of cocoa-nut fibres, tied looſely in bunches, to the top of a poliſhed handle. The tail-feathers of the cock, and thoſe of the tropic-bird, are uſed for the ſame purpoſe. Thoſe that are moſt in eſteem, are ſuch as have the handle formed of the leg or arm bones of an enemy killed in battle: theſe are preſerved with extraordinary care, and are handed down, from father to ſon, as trophies of the higheſt value.

The practice of *tatooing*, or puncturing the body, prevails among theſe people; and, of all the iſlands in this ocean, it is only at New-Zealand, and the Sandwich Iſles, that the face is *tatooed*. There is this difference between theſe two nations, that the New-Zealanders perform this operation in elegant ſpiral volutes, and the Sand-

Sandwich Iſlanders in ſtraight lines, that interſect each other at right angles.

Some of the natives have half their body, from head to foot, *tatooed*, which gives them a moſt ſtriking appearance. It is generally done with great neatneſs and regularity. Several of them have only an arm thus marked; others, a leg; ſome, again, *tatoo* both an arm and a leg; and others only the hand. The hands and arms of the women are punctured in a very neat manner; and they have a remarkable cuſtom of *tatooing* the tip of the tongues of ſome of the females. We had ſome reaſon to imagine, that the practice of puncturing is often intended as a ſign of mourning, on the deceaſe of a chief, or any other calamitous occurrence: for we were frequently informed, that ſuch a mark was in memory of ſuch a chief; and ſo of the others. The people of the loweſt order are *tatooed* with a particular mark, which diſtinguiſhes them as the property of the chiefs to whom they are reſpectively ſubject.

The common dreſs of the men of all ranks conſiſts, in general, of a piece of thick cloth called the *maro*, about a foot in breadth, which paſſes between the legs, and is faſtened round the waiſt. Their mats, which are of various ſizes, but, for the moſt part, about five feet in length, and four in breadth, are thrown over their ſhoulders, and brought forward before. Theſe, however, are rarely made uſe of, except in time

of war, for which purpoſe they appear to be better calculated than for common uſe, ſince they are of a thick heavy texture, and capable of breaking the blow of a ſtone, or of any blunt weapon. They generally go bare-footed, except when they travel over burnt ſtones, on which occaſion they ſecure their feet with a kind of ſandal, which is made of cords, twiſted from cocoa-nut fibres.

Beſides their ordinary dreſs, there is another, which is appropriated to their chiefs, and worn only on extraordinary occaſions. It conſiſts of a feathered cloak and cap, or helmet, of uncommon beauty and magnificence. This dreſs having been minutely deſcribed, in a former part of our work, we have only to add, that theſe cloaks are of different lengths, in proportion to the rank of the perſon who wears them; ſome trailing on the ground, and others no lower than the middle. The chiefs of inferior rank have likewiſe a ſhort cloak, which reſembles the former, and is made of the long tail-feathers of the cock, the man-of-war bird, and the tropic-bird, having a broad border of ſmall yellow and red feathers, and alſo a collar of the ſame. Others are compoſed of white feathers, with variegated borders. The cap or helmet, has a ſtrong lining of wicker-work, ſufficient to break the blow of any warlike weapon; for which purpoſe it appears to be intended. Theſe feathered dreſſes ſeemed to be very ſcarce, and to be worn only by the male ſex. During

our

our whole continuance in Karakakooa Bay, we never obſerved them uſed, except on three occaſions; firſt, in the remarkable ceremony of Terreeoboo's firſt viſit to our ſhips; ſecondly, by ſome chiefs, who appeared among the crowd on ſhore, when our unfortunate commander was killed; and, thirdly, when his bones were brought to us by Eappo.

The ſtriking reſemblance of this habit to the cloak and helmet which the Spaniards formerly wore, excited our curioſity to inquire, whether there might not be ſome reaſonable grounds for imagining that it had been borrowed from them. After all our endeavours to gain information on this head, we found, that the natives had no immediate acquaintance with any other people whatever; and that no tradition exiſted among them of theſe iſlands having ever before received a viſit from ſuch veſſels as our's. However, notwithſtanding the reſult of our inquiries on this ſubject, the form of this habit ſeems to be a ſufficient indication of its European origin; particularly when we reflect on another circumſtance, viz. that it is a remarkable deviation from the general agreement of dreſs, which is prevalent among the ſeveral branches of this great tribe, diſperſed over the Pacific Ocean. From this concluſion, we were induced to ſuppoſe, that ſome Buccaneer, or Spaniſh ſhip, might have been wrecked in the neighbourhood of theſe

iſlands.

iſlands. When it is conſidered, that the courſe of the Spaniſh trading veſſels from Acapulco to Manilla, is not many degrees to the ſouth of the Sandwich Iſles, in their paſſage out, and to the north, on their return, this ſuppoſition will not, we think, be deemed improbable.

There is very little difference between the common dreſs of the men and that of the women. The latter wear a piece of cloth wrapped round the waiſt, which deſcends half way down their thighs; and ſometimes, during the cool of the evening, they throw looſe pieces of fine cloth over their ſhoulders, like the Otaheitean females. The *pau* is another dreſs, which the younger part of the ſex often wear: it conſiſts of the thinneſt and fineſt cloth, wrapped ſeveral times about the middle, and reaching down to the leg; ſo that it has the appearance of a full ſhort petticoat. They cut their hair ſhort behind, and turn it up before, as is the cuſtom among the New-Zealanders and Otaheiteans. One woman, indeed, whom we ſaw in Karakakooa Bay, had her hair arranged in a very ſingular mode; ſhe had turned it up behind, and having brought it over her forehead, had doubled it back, ſo that it formed a ſort of ſhade to her face, and ſomewhat reſembled a ſmall bonnet.

Beſides their necklaces, which are compoſed of ſhells, or of a ſhining, hard, red berry, they wear dried flowers of the Indian mallow, formed

into wreaths; and likewiſe another elegant ornament, termed *eraie*, which is ſometimes faſtened round the hair, in the manner of a garland, but is uſually put round the neck; though it is occaſionally worn in both theſe ways at once, as may be ſeen in the annexed repreſentation of the woman of the Sandwich Iſlands. It is a kind of ruff, about as thick as a finger, formed with great ingenuity, of very ſmall feathers, woven together ſo cloſely, that the ſurface may be ſaid to equal the richeſt velvet in ſmoothneſs. The ground is, in general, red, with alternate circles of black, yellow, and green.

We have already deſcribed their bracelets, of which they have a great variety. Some of the women of Atooi wear ſmall figures of the turtle, made very neatly of ivory or wood, faſtened on their fingers in the ſame manner that rings are worn by us. There is likewiſe an ornament conſiſting of ſhells, tied in rows on a ground of ſtrong net-work, ſo as to ſtrike againſt each other, while in motion; which both ſexes, when they dance, faſten either round the ancles, or juſt below the knee, or round the arm. They ſometimes, inſtead of ſhells, uſe for this purpoſe, the teeth of dogs, and a hard red berry.

Another ornament, if indeed it deſerves that appellation, remains to be deſcribed. It is a ſort of maſk, compoſed of a large gourd, having holes cut in it for the noſe and eyes. The top of it is

ſtuck

ſtuck full of little green twigs, which appear, at ſome diſtance, like a waving plume; and the lower part has narrow ſtripes of cloth hanging from it, ſomewhat reſembling a beard. Theſe maſks we never ſaw worn but on two occaſions, and both times by a number of perſons aſſembled in a canoe, who approached the ſide of the ſhip, laughing and making droll geſticulations. We could never learn whether they were not alſo made uſe of as a defence for the head againſt ſtones, or in ſome of their public ſports and games, or were diſguiſed merely for the purpoſes of mummery.

They dwell together in ſmall towns or villages, which contain from about one hundred to two hundred houſes, built pretty cloſe to each other, without order or regularity, and have a winding path that leads through them. They are frequently flanked, towards the ſea-ſide, with looſe detached walls, which are, in all probability, intended for ſhelter and defence. The form of their habitations we have before deſcribed. They are of various dimenſions, from forty-five feet by twenty-four, to eighteen by twelve. Some are of a larger ſize, being fifty feet in length, and thirty in breadth, and entirely open at one end. Theſe, we were informed, were deſigned for the accommodation of ſtrangers or travellers, whoſe ſtay was likely to be ſhort.

Their furniture having been already mentioned, we have only to add, that, at one end of their houſes, are mats, on which they repoſe, with wooden pillows, or ſleeping-ſtools, perfectly reſembling thoſe of the Chineſe. Some of the beſt houſes have a court-yard before them, railed in very neatly, with ſmaller habitations for ſervants erected round it: in this area the family uſually eat and ſit in the day-time. In the ſides of the hills, and amongſt the ſteep rocks, we ſaw ſeveral holes or caves, which ſeemed to be inhabited; but, the entrance being defended by wicker-work, and, in the only one that we viſited, a ſtone fence being obſerved running acroſs it within, we ſuppoſed that they were chiefly intended as places of retreat, in caſe of an attack from enemies.

The people of an inferior claſs feed principally on fiſh, and vegetables, ſuch as plantains, bread-fruit, ſweet potatoes, ſugar-canes, yams, and *taro*. To theſe, perſons of ſuperior rank add the fleſh of dogs and hogs, dreſſed after the ſame method that is practiſed at the Society Iſles. They likewiſe eat fowls of a domeſtic kind, which, however, are neither plentiful, nor in any great degree of eſtimation.

Though, on our firſt arrival at theſe iſlands, yams and bread-fruit ſeemed ſcarce, we did not find this to be the caſe on our ſecond viſit: it is therefore probable, that, as theſe vegetable articles were commonly planted in the interior parts of

the country, the islanders had not had sufficient time for bringing them down to us, during our short continuance in Wymoa Bay, on our first visit.

They salt their fish, and preserve them in gourd-shells; not, indeed, with a view of providing against an occasional scarcity, but from the inclination they have for salted provisions; for we also found, that the chiefs frequently had pieces of pork pickled in the same manner, which they considered as a great delicacy. Their cookery is much the same as at the Friendly and Society Islands; and though some of our people disliked their *taro* puddings, on account of their sourness, others were of a different opinion. It is remarkable, that they had not acquired the art of preserving the bread-fruit, and making of it the sour paste named *maihee*, as is the practice at the Society Isles; and it afforded us great satisfaction, that we had it in our power to communicate to them this useful secret, in return for the generous and hospitable treatment we received from them.

They are very cleanly at their meals; and their method of dressing both their vegetable and animal food, was universally acknowledged to be superior to our's. The *Erees* constantly begin their meals with a dose of the extract of pepper-root, or *ava*, prepared in the usual mode. The women eat apart from the other sex, and are prohibited, as before observed, from feeding on pork,

turtle, and ſome particular ſpecies of plantains. Notwithſtanding this interdiction, they would privately eat pork with us; but we could never prevail on them to taſte the two latter articles of food.

They generally riſe with the ſun; and, after having enjoyed the cool of the evening, retire to their repoſe a few hours after ſun-ſet. The *Erees* are occupied in making canoes and mats; the *Towtows* are chiefly employed in the plantations, and alſo in fiſhing; and the women are engaged in the manufacture of cloth. They amuſe themſelves, in their leiſure hours, with various diverſions. Their young perſons, of both ſexes, are fond of dancing; and, on more ſolemn occaſions, they entertain themſelves with wreſtling and boxing matches, performed after the manner of the natives of the Friendly Iſlands; to whom, however, they are greatly inferior in all theſe reſpects.

Their dances, which bear a greater reſemblance to thoſe of the New-Zealanders, than of the Friendly or Society Iſlanders, are introduced with a ſolemn kind of ſong, in which the whole number join, at the ſame time ſlowly moving their legs, and gently ſtriking their breaſts; their attitudes and manner being very eaſy and graceful. So far they reſemble the dances of the Society Iſles. After this has continued for the ſpace of about ten minutes, they gradually quicken both the

tune

tune and the motions, and do not deſiſt till they are oppreſſed with fatigue. This part of the performance is the counter-part of that of the inhabitants of New-Zealand; and, as among thoſe people, the perſon whoſe action is the moſt violent, and who continues this exerciſe the longeſt, is applauded by the ſpectators as the beſt dancer. It muſt be remarked, that, in this dance, the females only engage; and that the dances of the men reſemble what we ſaw of the ſmall parties at the Friendly Iſles; and which may, perhaps, more properly, be termed the accompanyment of ſongs, with correſpondent motions of the whole body. But, as we ſaw ſome boxing exhibitions, of the ſame kind with thoſe we had ſeen at the Friendly Iſles, it is not improbable that they had likewiſe here their grand ceremonious dances, wherein numbers both of men and women were performers.

The muſic of theſe people is of a rude kind; for the only muſical inſtruments that we obſerved among them, were drums of various ſizes. Their ſongs, however, which they are ſaid to ſing in parts *, and which they accompany with a gentle

* The circumſtance of their ſinging in parts, has been doubted by ſeveral perſons of great ſkill in muſic. Captain Burney, however, and Captain Phillips of the marines, both of whom have ſome knowledge of muſic, are ſtrongly of opinion, that they did ſing in parts; that is, they ſung together in different notes.

motion of their arms, like the inhabitants of the Friendly Iſlands, have a very pleaſing effect.

They are greatly addicted to gambling. One of their games reſembles our game of draughts; but, from the number of ſquares, it ſeems to be much more intricate. The board is of the length of about two feet, and is divided into two hundred and thirty-eight ſquares, fourteen in a row. In this game they uſe black and white pebbles, which they move from one ſquare to another. Another of their games conſiſts in concealing a ſtone under ſome cloth, which is ſpread out by one of the parties, and rumpled in ſuch a manner, that it is difficult to diſtinguiſh where the ſtone lies. The antagoniſt then ſtrikes, with a ſtick, that part of the cloth where he ſuppoſes the ſtone to be; and the chances being, upon the whole, againſt his hitting it, odds of all degrees, varying with the opinion of the dexterity of the parties, are laid on the occaſion. Their manner of playing at bowls nearly reſembles our's: the bowls have been before deſcribed.

They often entertain themſelves with races between boys and girls; on which occaſions they lay wagers with great ſpirit. We ſaw a man beating his breaſt, and tearing his hair, in the violence of rage, for having loſt three hatchets at one of theſe races, which he had purchaſed from us with near half his property a very little time before.

Both

Both ſexes are ſurpriſingly expert in ſwimming, which, among theſe people, is not only deemed a neceſſary art, but is alſo a favourite diverſion. One particular method, in which we ſometimes ſaw them amuſe themſelves with this exerciſe, in Karakakooa bay, deſerves to be related. The ſurf, that breaks on the coaſt round this bay, extends about one hundred and fifty yards from the ſhore; and, within that ſpace, the ſurges of the ſea are daſhed againſt the beach with extreme violence. Whenever the impetuoſity of the ſurf is augmented to its greateſt height, they make choice of that time for this amuſement, which they perform in the following manner. About twenty or thirty of the iſlanders take each a long narrow board, rounded at both ends, and ſet out from the ſhore in company with each other. They plunge under the firſt wave they meet, and, after they have ſuffered it to roll over them, riſe again beyond it, and ſwim further out into the ſea. They encounter the ſecond wave in the ſame manner with the firſt. The principal difficulty conſiſts in ſeizing a favourable opportunity of diving under it; for, if a perſon miſſes the proper moment, he is caught by the ſurf, and forced back with great violence; and his utmoſt dexterity is then required, to prevent his being daſhed againſt the rocks. When, in conſequence of theſe repeated efforts, they have gained the ſmooth water beyond the ſurf, they recline themſelves at length

length upon their board, and prepare for their return to ſhore. As the ſurf is compoſed of a number of waves, of which every third is obſerved to be conſiderably larger than the reſt, and to flow higher upon the ſhore, while the others break in the intermediate ſpace; their firſt object is to place themſelves on the top of the largeſt ſurge, which drives them along with aſtoniſhing rapidity towards the land. If they ſhould place themſelves, by miſtake, on one of the ſmaller waves, which breaks before they gain the ſhore, or ſhould find themſelves unable to keep their board in a proper direction on the upper part of the ſwell, they remain expoſed to the fury of the next; to avoid which, they are under the neceſſity of diving again, and regaining the place whence they ſet out. Thoſe perſons who ſucceed in their object of reaching the ſhore, are ſtill in a very hazardous ſituation. As the coaſt is defended by a chain of rocks, with a ſmall opening between them in ſeveral places, they are obliged to ſteer their plank through one of theſe openings; or, in caſe of ill ſucceſs in that reſpect, to quit it before they reach the rocks, and, diving under the wave, make their way back again as well as they are able. This is conſidered as highly diſgraceful, and is attended with the loſs of the plank, which we have ſeen daſhed to pieces, at the very inſtant the native quitted it. The amazing courage and addreſs, with

which they perform theſe dangerous manœuvres, are almoſt incredible.

The following accident ſhews at how early a period they are ſo far accuſtomed to the water, as to loſe all apprehenſions of it, and ſet its perils at defiance. A canoe, in which was a woman with her children, happening to be overſet, one of the children, an infant of about four years of age, appeared to be greatly delighted with what had happened, ſwimming about at its eaſe, and playing a number of tricks, till the canoe was brought to its former poſition.

Among the amuſements of the children, we obſerved one that was frequently played at, and which ſhewed a conſiderable ſhare of dexterity. They take a ſhort ſtick, through one extremity of which runs a peg ſharpened at both ends, extending about an inch on each ſide: then throwing up a ball formed of green leaves moulded together, and faſtened with twine, they catch it on one of the points of the peg; immediately after which, they throw it up again from the peg, then turn the ſtick round, and catch the ball on the other point of the peg. Thus, for ſome time, they continue catching it on each point of the peg alternately, without miſſing it. They are equally expert at another diverſion of a ſimilar nature, throwing up in the air, and catching, in their turns, many of theſe balls; and we have often ſeen little children thus keep five balls in motion

motion at once. This latter game is alſo practiſed by the young people at the Friendly Iſles.

The figure and dimenſions of the canoes ſeen by us at Atooi, have been already deſcribed. Thoſe of the other Sandwich Iſlands were made exactly in the ſame manner; and the largeſt we ſaw was a double canoe that belonged to Terreeoboo, meaſuring ſeventy feet in length, twelve in breadth, and between three and four in depth; and each was hollowed out of one tree.

Their method of agriculture, as well as navigation, reſembles that of the other iſlands of the Pacific. They have made conſiderable proficiency in ſculpture, and their ſkill in painting or ſtaining cloth, and in the manufacture of mats, is very great. The moſt curious ſpecimens of their ſculpture, that we had an opportunity of obſerving, were the wooden bowls, in which the *Erees* drink *ava*. Theſe are, in general, eight or ten inches in diameter, perfectly round, and extremely well poliſhed. They are ſupported by three or four ſmall human figures, repreſented in different attitudes. Some of them reſt on the ſhoulders of their ſupporters; others on the hands, extended over the head; and ſome on the head and hands. The figures are very neatly finiſhed, and accurately proportioned; and even the anatomy of the muſcles is well expreſſed.

They manufacture their cloth in the ſame manner, and of the ſame materials, as at the Society

and

and Friendly Iſles. That which they intend to paint, is of a ſtrong and thick texture, ſeveral folds being beaten and incorporated together; after which they cut it in breadths, two or three feet wide, and then paint it in a great variety of patterns, with ſuch regularity and comprehenſiveneſs of deſign, as ſhew an extraordinary portion of taſte and fancy. The exactneſs with which even the moſt intricate patterns are continued, is really aſtoniſhing, as they have no ſtamps, and as the whole is performed by the eye, with a piece of bamboo cane dipped in paint; the hand being ſupported by another piece of the ſame ſort of cane. They extract their colours from the ſame berries, and other vegetable articles, which are made uſe of at Otaheite for this purpoſe.

The operation of ſtaining or painting their cloth, is confined to the females, and is denominated *kipparee*. It is remarkable, that they always called our writing by this name. The young women would frequently take the pen from our hands, and ſhew us, that they were as well acquainted with the uſe of it as we ourſelves were; telling us, at the ſame time, that our pens were inferior to theirs. They conſidered a manuſcript ſheet of paper, as a piece of cloth ſtriped after the mode of our country; and it was with the greateſt difficulty that we could make

them

them underſtand, that our figures contained a meaning in them which theirs were deſtitute of.

They make their mats of the leaves of the *pandanus*; and theſe, as well as their cloths, are beautifully worked in various patterns, and ſtained with divers colours. Some of them have a ground of a ſtraw colour, embelliſhed with green ſpots; others are of a pale green, ſpotted with ſquares, or rhomboids, of red; and ſome are ornamented with elegant ſtripes, either in ſtraight or waving lines of brown and red. In this branch of manufacture, whether we regard the fineneſs, beauty, or ſtrength, theſe iſlanders may be ſaid to excel the whole world.

Their fiſhing-hooks are of various ſizes and figures; but thoſe which are principally made uſe of, are about two or three inches in length, and are formed in the ſhape of a ſmall fiſh, ſerving as a bait, with a bunch of feathers faſtened to the head or tail. They make their hooks of bone, mother-of-pearl, or wood, pointed and barbed with little bones or tortoiſe-ſhell. Thoſe with which they fiſh for ſharks, are very large, being, in general, of the length of ſix or eight inches. Conſidering the materials of which theſe hooks are compoſed, their neatneſs and ſtrength are amazing; and, indeed, upon trial, we found them ſuperior to our own.

Of the bark of the *touta*, or cloth-tree, neatly twiſted, they form the line which they uſe for fiſhing,

fiſhing, for making nets, and for ſome other purpoſes. It is of different degrees of fineneſs, and may be continued to any length. They have alſo a finer ſort, which they make of the bark of a ſhrub named *areemah*; and the fineſt is compoſed of human hair: this laſt, however, is chiefly made uſe of for matters of ornament.

They likewiſe make cordage of a ſtronger kind, from cocoa-nut fibres, for the rigging of their canoes. Some of this, which was purchaſed by us for our own uſe, was found to be well calculated for the ſmaller kinds of running rigging. They alſo manufacture another ſort of cordage, which is flat, and extremely ſtrong, and is principally uſed for the purpoſe of laſhing the roofs of their houſes. This laſt is not twiſted after the manner of the former ſorts, but is formed of the fibrous ſtrings of the coat of the cocoa-nut, plaited with the fingers, in the ſame mode which is practiſed by our ſeamen in making their points for the reefing of ſails.

They apply their gourds to various domeſtic purpoſes. Theſe grow to ſuch an enormous magnitude, that ſome of them will contain from ten to a dozen gallons. In order to adapt them the better to their reſpective uſes, they take care to give them different ſhapes, by faſtening bandages round them during their growth. Thus, ſome of them are in the form of a diſh, ſerving to hold their puddings, vegetables, ſalted proviſions,

viſions, ſalt, &c. Others are of a long cylindrical form, and ſerve to contain their fiſhing-tackle; which two ſorts are furniſhed with neat cloſe covers, made alſo of the gourd. Others are in the ſhape of a long-necked bottle; and, in theſe, water is kept. They frequently ſcore them with a heated inſtrument, ſo as to communicate to them the appearance of being painted, in a great variety of elegant deſigns.

Their pans, in which they make ſalt, are made of earth, lined with clay; and are, in general, ſix or eight feet ſquare, and about two-thirds of a foot in depth. They are elevated on a bank of ſtones near the high-water mark, whence the ſalt water is conducted to the bottom of them, in trenches, out of which they are filled; and, in a ſhort time, the ſun performs the proceſs of evaporation. The ſalt we met with at Oneeheow and Atooi, during our firſt viſit, was browniſh and rather dirty; but that which we afterwards procured in Karakakooa Bay, was white, and of an excellent quality; and we obtained an ample ſupply of it, inſomuch that, beſides the quantity uſed by us in ſalting pork, we filled all our empty caſks with it.

The warlike weapons of theſe people are daggers, which they call by the name *pahooa*; ſpears, ſlings, and clubs. The *pahooa* is made of a black heavy wood, that reſembles ebony. It is commonly from one to two feet in length; and has a ſtring

a ſtring paſſing through the handle, by which it is ſuſpended to the arm. The blade is ſomewhat rounded in the middle; the ſides are ſharp, and terminate in a point. This inſtrument is intended for cloſe engagements; and, in the hands of the natives, is a very deſtructive one.

Their ſpears are of two kinds, and are formed of a hard wood, which, in its appearance, is not unlike mahogany. One ſort is from ſix to eight feet in length, well poliſhed, and increaſing gradually in thickneſs from the extremity till within the diſtance of ſix or ſeven inches from the point, which tapers ſuddenly, and has five or ſix rows of barbs. It is probable, that theſe are uſed in the way of javelins. The other ſort, with which the warriors we ſaw at Atooi and Owhyhee were chiefly armed, are from twelve to fifteen feet in length; and, inſtead of being barbed, terminate towards the point in the manner of their daggers.

Their ſlings are the ſame with our common ſlings, except in this reſpect, that the ſtone is lodged on matting inſtead of leather. Their clubs are formed indifferently of ſeveral kinds of wood: they are of various ſizes and ſhapes, and of rude workmanſhip.

## CHAP. VIII.

*Continuation of the Account of the Sandwich Iſlands—Diviſion of the People into three Claſſes—Superior Power of the Eree-taboo—Genealogical Account of the Kings of Owyhee and Mowee—Authority of the Erees—Tyranny of Pareea, exerciſed on an inferior Chief—Puniſhment of Offences—Account of their Religion—Society of Prieſts—The Orono—Idols—Eatooas of deceaſed Chiefs—Religious Ceremonies, Chantings, &c. previous to the drinking of Ava—Human Sacrifices very frequent among them—Religious Cuſtom of knocking out the Fore-Teeth—Their Ideas of a future State—Particular Explanation of the Word Taboo—Marriages—Remarkable Inſtance of Jealouſy—Funeral Ceremonies at the Death of an old Chief, &c.*

IN the Sandwich Iſlands, the inhabitants are divided into three claſſes. The *Erees*, or chiefs of each diſtrict, are the firſt; and one of theſe is ſuperior to the reſt, who is called, at Owhyhee, *Eree-taboo*, and *Eree Moee*; the firſt name expreſſing his authority, and the latter ſignifying that, in his preſence, all muſt proſtrate themſelves. Thoſe of the ſecond claſs appear to enjoy a right of property, but have no authority. Thoſe who compoſe the third claſs, are called

*towtows*, or ſervants, and have not either rank or property.

The ſuperior power and diſtinction of Terreeoboo, the Eree-taboo of Owhyhee, was ſufficiently evident from his reception at Karakakooa, on his firſt arrival. The inhabitants all proſtrated themſelves at the entrance of their houſes; and the canoes were *tabooed*, till he diſcharged the interdict. He was then juſt returned from Mowee, an iſland he was contending for, in behalf of his ſon Teewarro, whoſe wife was the only child of the king of that place, againſt Taheeterree, his ſurviving brother. In this expedition, he was attended by many of his warriors; but we could never learn whether they ſerved him as volunteers, or whether they held their rank and property by that tenure.

That the ſubordinate chiefs are tributary to him, is evidently proved in the inſtance of Kaoo, which has been already related. It has alſo been obſerved, that the two moſt powerful chiefs of the Sandwich Iſlands, are Terreeoboo, and Perreeorannee; the former being chief of Owhyhee, and the latter of Woahoo; all the ſmaller iſles being governed by one of theſe ſovereigns; Mowee was, at this time, claimed by Terreeoboo, for his ſon and intended ſucceſſor; Atooi and Oneeheow being in the poſſeſſion of the grandſons of Perreeorannee.

Without entering into the genealogy of the kings of Owhyhee and Mowee, it may be neceſſary to mention, that, when we were firſt off Mowee, Terreeoboo and his warriors were there to ſupport the claims made by his wife, his ſon, and his daughter-in-law; and a battle had then been fought with the oppoſite party, in which Terreeoboo had been victorious. Matters, however, were afterwards compromiſed; Taheeterree was to have poſſeſſion of the three neighbouring iſlands, during his life; Teewarro to be acknowledged the Chief of Mowee, and to ſucceed to Owhyhee, on the death of Terreeoboo; together with the three iſlands contiguous to Mowee, after the deceaſe of Taheeterree. If Teewarro, who has lately married his half ſiſter, ſhould die, and leave no iſſue behind him, thoſe iſlands deſcend to Maiha-maiha, whom we have frequently mentioned, he being the ſon of Terreeoboo's deceaſed brother: and ſhould he die without iſſue, it is doubtful who would be the ſucceſſor, for Terreeoboo's two youngeſt ſons, being born of a mother who had no rank, would be debarred all right of ſucceſſion. We did not ſee Queen Rora-rora, whom Terreeoboo had left at Mowee; but we had an opportunity of ſeeing Kanee Kaberaia, the mother of the two youths of whom he was ſo extremely fond.

From what has been already mentioned, it appears pretty clearly that their government is

hereditary; whence it appears probable, that the inferior titles as well as property, deſcend in the ſame courſe. Reſpecting Perreeorannee, we only diſcovered that he is an *Eree-taboo*; that he was, on ſome pretence, invading the poſſeſſion of Taheeterree, and that the iſlands to leeward were governed by his grandſons.

The *Erees* appear to have unlimited power over the inferior claſſes of people; many inſtances of which occurred daily whilſt we continued among them. On the other hand, the people are implicitly obedient. It is remarkable, however, that we never ſaw the chiefs exerciſe any acts of cruelty, injuſtice, or inſolence towards them; though they put in practice their power over each other, in a moſt tyrannical degree: which is fully proved by the two following inſtances.

One of the lower order of chiefs, having ſhewn great civility to the maſter of the ſhip, on his examination of Karakakooa Bay; Mr. King, ſome time afterwards, took him on board the Reſolution, and introduced him to Captain Cook, who engaged him to dine with us. While we remained at table, Pareea entered, whoſe countenance manifeſted the higheſt indignation at ſeeing our gueſt ſo honourably entertained. He ſeized him by the hair of the head, and would have dragged him out of the cabin, if the Captain had not interfered. After much altercation, we could obtain no other indulgence (without quarrelling

with Pareea) than that our gueſt ſhould be permitted to remain in the cabin, on condition that he ſeated himſelf on the floor, while Pareea occupied his place at the table. An inſtance, ſomewhat ſimilar, happened when Terreeoboo came firſt on board the Reſolution; when Maiha-maiha, who attended him, ſeeing Pareea upon deck, turned him moſt ignominiouſly out of the ſhip; even though we knew Pareea to be a man of the firſt conſequence.

Whether the lower claſs have their property ſecured, from the rapacity of the great chiefs, we cannot certainly ſay, but it appears to be well protected againſt theft and depredation. All their plantations, their houſes, their hogs, and their cloth, are left unguarded, without fear or apprehenſion. In the plain country, they ſeparate their poſſeſſions by walls; and, in the woods where horſe-plantains grow, they uſe white flags to diſcriminate property, in the ſame manner as they do bunches of leaves at Otaheite. Theſe circumſtances ſtrongly indicate, that, where property is concerned, the power of the chiefs is not arbitrary; but ſo far limited, as to afford encouragement to the inferior orders to cultivate the ſoil, which they occupy diſtinct from each other.

The information we could obtain, reſpecting their adminiſtration of juſtice, is exceedingly imperfect. If a quarrel aroſe among the lower claſs of people, the matter was referred to the

deciſion

deciſion of ſome chief. If an inferior chief had offended one of ſuperior rank, his puniſhment was dictated by the feelings of the ſuperior at that moment. If he ſhould fortunately eſcape the firſt tranſports of his rage, he, perhaps, found means, through the mediation of others, to compound for his offence, by all, or a part of his effects.

Their religion reſembles that of the Society and Friendly Iſlands. In common with each other, they have all their *Morais*, their *Whattas*, their ſacred ſongs, and their ſacrifices. Theſe are convincing proofs that their religious opinions are derived from the ſame ſource. The ceremonies here are, indeed, longer, and more numerous than in the iſlands above-mentioned. And though, in all theſe places, the care and performance of their religious rites, is committed to a particular claſs of people; yet we had never found a regular ſociety of prieſts, till we arrived at Kakooa, in Karakakooa Bay. *Orono* was the title given to the principal of this order; a title which ſeemed to imply ſomething highly ſacred, and which almoſt received adoration in the perſon of Omeeah. The privilege of holding the principal offices in this order, is doubtleſs limited to certain families. Omeeah, the *Orono*, was Kaoo's ſon, and Kaireekeea's nephew. Kaireekeea preſided in all religious ceremonies at the morai, in the abſence of his grandfather. It was obſerved, likewiſe, that

the ſon of Omeeah, an infant of about the age of five years, had always a number of attendants, and ſuch other marks of attention and eſteem were ſhewn him, as we never obſerved in any ſimilar inſtance. Hence we concluded, that his life was an object of much conſequence, and that he would eventually ſucceed to the high dignity of his father.

The title of *Orono*, we have already obſerved, was beſtowed upon Captain Cook; and it is very certain that they conſidered us as a race of beings ſuperior to themſelves; frequently repeating, that great *Eatooa* lived in our country. The favourite little idol (which has been already deſcribed) on the *morai*, in Karakakooa Bay, is called *Koonooraekaiee*, and is ſaid to be Terreeoboo's god, who alſo reſided amongſt us.

Infinite variety of theſe images were to be ſeen, both on the *morais*, and about their houſes, on which they beſtow different names; but they certainly were held in very little eſtimation, from their contemptuous expreſſions of them, and from their expoſing them to ſale for trifles; though they generally had one particular figure in high favour, to which, whilſt it continued a favourite, all their adoration was addreſſed. They arrayed it in red cloth, beat their drums, and ſang hymns before it; placed bunches of red feathers, and different vegetables at its feet; and frequently

expoſed

expoſed a pig, or a dog, to rot on the *Whatta*, near which it was placed.

A party of us were conducted to a large houſe, in a bay to the ſouthward of Karakakooa, in which we beheld the black figure of a man, reſting on his toes and fingers, and his head was inclined backward; the limbs were well proportioned, and the whole was beautifully poliſhed. This figure was called *Maee*; round which thirteen others were placed, with ſhapes rude and diſtorted. Theſe, we were told, were the Eatooas of deceaſed chiefs, whoſe names they repeated. Plenty of *Whattas* were ſeen within the place, with the remains of offerings on many of them. They alſo admit into their houſes, many ludicrous and obſcene idols, not unlike the Priapus of the Ancients.

Former voyagers have remarked, that the Society and Friendly Iſlanders, pay adoration to particular birds; and it ſeems to be a cuſtom that is prevalent in theſe iſlands. Ravens are perhaps the objects of it here; for Mr. King ſaw two of theſe birds perfectly tame, at the village of Kakooa, and was told they were *Eatooas:* he offered ſeveral articles for them, which were all refuſed; and he was particularly cautioned not to hurt or offend them.

The prayers and offerings, made by the prieſts before their meals, may be claſſed among their religious ceremonies. As they always drink *ava* before

before they begin their repaſt, whilſt that is chewing, the ſuperior in rank begins a ſort of hymn, in which he is ſoon after joined by one or more of the company; the bodies of the others are put in motion, and their hands are gently clapped together in concert with the fingers. The *ava* being ready, cups of it are preſented to thoſe who do not join in the hymn, which are held in their hands till it is concluded; when, with united voice, they make a loud reſponſe, and drink their *ava*. The performers are then ſerved with ſome of it, which they drink, after the ſame ceremony has been repeated. And, if any perſon of a very ſuperior rank ſhould be preſent, a cup is preſented to him laſt of all. After chanting for a ſhort time, and hearing a reſponſive chant from the others, he pours a ſmall quantity on the ground, and drinks the reſt. A piece of the fleſh, which has been dreſſed, is then cut off, and, together with ſome of the vegetables, is placed at the foot of the figure of the Eatooa; and, after another hymn has been chanted, they begin their meal. A ceremony, in many reſpects reſmembling this, is alſo performed by the chiefs, when they drink *ava* between their regular meals.

According to the accounts given by the natives, human ſacrifices are more common here, than in any of the iſlands we have viſited. They have recourſe to theſe horrid rites on the commencement

mencement of a war, and previous to every great battle, or other ſignal enterprize. The death of a chief demands a ſacrifice of one or more *tow-tows*, according to the rank he bears; and we were informed that no leſs than ten were doomed to ſuffer, on the death of Terreeoboo. This practice, however, is the leſs horrible, as the unhappy victims are totally unacquainted with their fate. Thoſe who are deſtined to fall, are attacked with large clubs, wherever they may happen to be; and, after they are dead, are conveyed to the place where the ſubſequent rites are to be performed. This brings to our remembrance the ſkulls of thoſe who had been ſacrificed on the deceaſe of ſome principal chief, and were fixed to the *morai* at Kakooa. At the village of Kowrowa, we received further information upon this ſubject; where we were ſhewn a ſmall piece of ground, within a ſtone-fence, which we were told was an *Here-eere*, or burying-place of a chief. The perſon who gave us this information, pointing to one of the corners, added,—and there lie the *tangata* and *waheene-taboo*, or the man and woman who became ſacrifices at his funeral.

The knocking out their fore-teeth may be, with propriety, claſſed among their religious cuſtoms. Moſt of the common people, and many of the chiefs, had loſt one or more of them; and this, we underſtood was conſidered as a propitiatory ſacrifice to the Eatooa, to avert his anger;

anger, and not like the cutting off a part of the finger at the Friendly Iſlands, to expreſs the violence of their grief at the deceaſe of a friend.

Of their opinions, with reſpect to a future ſtate, we had very defective information. On enquiring of them, whither the dead were gone? We were told that the breath, which they ſeemed to conſider as the immortal part, was fled to the *Eatooa*. They ſeemed alſo to give a deſcription of ſome place, which they ſuppoſe to be the abode of the dead; but we could not learn that they had any idea of rewards or puniſhments.

An explanation of the word *taboo*, may not, in this place, be improperly introduced. On aſking the reaſons of the intercourſe being interdicted, between us and the iſlanders, the day preceding Terreeoboo's arrival, we were informed, that the bay was *tabooed*. The ſame interdiction took place, by our deſire, when we interred the remains of Captain Cook. The moſt implicit obedience, in theſe two inſtances, was rendered by the natives; but whether on religious principles, or in deference to civil authority, we cannot pretend to determine.

The ground on which our obſervatories were fixed, and the place where our maſts were depoſited, were *tabooed*, and the operation was equally efficacious. This conſecration was performed only by the prieſts; and yet, at our requeſt, the men ventured on the ſpot which was *tabooed*; whence

whence it ſhould ſeem they entertained no religious apprehenſions, their obedience being limited merely to our refuſal. No inducements could bring the women near us; on account, it is preſumed, of the *morai* adjoining; which they are, at all times, prohibited from approaching; not only here, but in all the iſlands of theſe ſeas.

Women, it has been obſerved, are always *tabooed*, or forbidden to eat certain articles of food. We have ſeen many of them, at their meals, have their meat put into their mouths by others; and, on our requeſting to know the reaſon of it, we were informed, that they were *tabooed*, and not permitted to feed themſelves. This prohibition was always the conſequence of aſſiſting at any funeral, touching a dead body, and many other occaſions. The word *taboo* is indifferently applied, either to perſons or things; as, the natives are *tabooed*, the bay is *tabooed*, &c. This word is alſo expreſſive of any thing ſacred, devoted, or eminent. The king of Owhyhee was called *Eree-taboo*, and a human victim, *tangata taboo*: and, among the Friendly Iſlanders, Tonga, where the king reſides, is called *Tongataboo*.

Very little can be ſaid reſpecting their marriages, except that ſuch a compact ſeems to exiſt among them. It has already been mentioned, that, when Terreeoboo had left his queen Rorarora at Mowee, another woman cohabited with him, by whom he had children, and ſeemed particulary

ticularly attached to her; but, whether polygamy is allowed, or whether it is mixed with concubinage, either among the principal or inferior orders, we ſaw too little of, to warrant any concluſions. From what we ſaw of the domeſtic concerns of the lower claſs of people, one man and one woman ſeemed to have the direction of the houſe, and the children were ſubordinate to them, as in civilized countries.

The following is the only inſtance of any thing like jealouſy, which we have ſeen among them; and which ſhews, that, among married women of rank, not only fidelity, but even a degree of reſerve is required.

At one of their boxing-matches, Omeah roſe two or three times from his place, and approached his wife with ſtrong marks of diſpleaſure, commanding her, as we ſuppoſed, to withdraw. Whether he thought her beauty engaged too much of our attention, or whatever might be his motives, there certainly exiſted no real cauſe of jealouſy. She, however, continued in her place, and, at the concluſion of the entertainment, joined our party; and even ſolicited ſome trifling preſents. She was informed that we had not any about us; but that, if ſhe would accompany us to the tent, ſhe ſhould be welcome to make a choice of what ſhe liked. She was, accordingly, proceeding with us; which, being obſerved by Omeah, he followed in a great rage, ſeized her by

by the hair, and, with his fiſts, began to inflict ſevere corporal puniſhment. Having been the innocent cauſe of this extraordinary treatment, we were exceedingly concerned at it; though we underſtood it would be highly improper for us to interfere, between huſband and wife of ſuch ſuperior rank. The natives, however, at length, interpoſed; and, the next day, we had the ſatisfaction of meeting them together, perfectly ſatisfied with each other; and, what was extremely ſingular, the lady would not permit us to rally the huſband on his behaviour; which we had an inclination to do; plainly telling us, that he had acted very properly.

At Karakakooa Bay, we had twice an opportunity of ſeeing a part of their funeral rites. Hearing of the death of an old chief, not far from our obſervatories, ſome of us repaired to the place, where we beheld a number of people aſſembled. They were ſeated round an area, fronting the houſe where the deceaſed lay; and a man, having on a red feathered cap, came to the door, conſtantly putting out his head, and making a moſt lamentable howl, accompanied with horrid grimaces, and violent diſtortions of the face. A large mat was afterwards ſpread upon the area, and thirteen women and two men, who came out of the houſe, ſat down upon it in three equal rows; three of the women, and the two men, being in front. The women had feathered ruffs

ruffs on their necks and hands; and their ſhoulders were decorated with broad green leaves, curiouſly ſcolloped. Near a ſmall hut, at one corner of this area, half a dozen boys were placed, waving ſmall white banners, and *taboo* ſticks, who would not ſuffer us to approach them. Hence we imagined, that the dead body was depoſited in the hut, but we were afterwards informed that it remained in the houſe, where the tricks were playing at the door, by the man in the red cap. The company, ſeated on the mat, ſung a melancholy tune, accompanied with a gentle motion of the arms and body. This having continued ſome time, they put themſelves in a poſture between kneeling and ſitting, and their arms and bodies into a moſt rapid motion, keeping pace at the ſame time with the muſic. Theſe laſt exertions being too violent to continue, at intervals they had ſlower motions. An hour having paſſed in theſe ceremonies, more mats were ſpread upon the area, when the dead chief's widow, and three or four other elderly women, came out of the houſe with ſlow and ſolemn pace; and ſeating themſelves before the company, began to wail moſt bitterly, in which they were joined by the three rows of women behind them; the two men appearing melancholy and penſive. They continued thus, with little variation, till late in the evening, when we left them; and, at day-light in the morning, the people were

were diſperſed, and every thing appeared perfectly quiet. We were then given to underſtand, that the body was removed; but we could not learn how it was diſpoſed of. While we were directing our enquiries to this object, we were approached by three women of rank, who ſignified to us, that our preſence interrupted the performance of ſome neceſſary rites. Soon after we had left them, we heard their cries and lamentations; and, when we met them a few hours afterwards, the lower part of their faces were painted perfectly black.

We had alſo an opportunity of obſerving the ceremonies on the funeral of one of the ordinary claſs. Hearing ſome mournful cries, iſſuing from a miſerable hut, we entered it, and diſcovered two women, which we ſuppoſed to be mother and daughter, weeping over the body of a man who had that moment expired. They firſt covered the body with a cloth; then, lying down by it, they ſpread the cloth over themſelves, beginning a melancholy kind of ſong, often repeating *Aweh medoaah! Aweh tanee!* Oh my father! Oh my huſband! In one corner of the houſe, a younger daughter lay proſtrate on the ground, having ſome black cloth ſpread over her, and repeating the ſame expreſſions. On our quitting this melancholy ſcene, we found many of their neighbours, collected together at the door, who were all perfectly ſilent, and attentive to their

lamentations. Mr. King was willing to have embraced this opportunity of knowing in what manner the body would be diſpoſed of; and therefore, after being convinced that it was not removed when he went to bed, he ordered the ſentries to walk before the houſe, and if there were any appearances of removing the body, to acquaint him with it. The ſentries, however, were remiſs in the performance of their duty, for, before the morning, the body was taken away. On aſking how it had been diſpoſed of, they pointed towards the ſea, perhaps thereby indicating, that it had been depoſited in the deep, or that it had been conveyed to ſome burying-ground beyond the bay. The place of interment for the chiefs, is the *morai*, or *heree erees*, and thoſe who are ſacrificed on the occaſion, are buried by the ſide of them. The *morai* in which the chief was interred, who, after making a ſpirited reſiſtance, was killed in the cave, has a hanging of red cloth round it.

A

# VOYAGE

TO THE

# PACIFIC OCEAN.

## BOOK VI.

TRANSACTIONS IN A SECOND EXPEDITION TO THE NORTH, BY THE WAY OF KAMTSCHATKA, AND IN RETURNING HOME, BY THE WAY OF CANTON, AND THE CAPE OF GOOD HOPE.

---

## CHAP. I.

*Quit Oneeheow—Unſucceſsful Attempt to diſcover Modoopapappa—Steer for Awatſka Bay—See vaſt Quantities of Oceanic Birds—Prepare for a cold Climate—Seamen require directing like Children—Sudden Change of Climate—The leaking of the Reſolution occaſions great Diſtreſs—See the Coaſt of Kamtſchatka—Continued Showers of Sleet, and great Severity of Weather—Loſe Sight of the Diſcovery—The Reſolution enters Awatſka Bay—With ſome Difficulty diſcover the Town of St. Peter and St. Paul—Party ſent aſhore—Avoided by Inhabitants on a Sledge—Their Reception by the Commander of the Port—Diſpatches to the Commander at Bolcheretſk—Arrival of the Diſcovery in the Bay—Return of the Meſſenger—Curious Mode of Travelling—Viſit from a Ruſſian Merchant, and a German Servant.*

WE weighed anchor on the 15th of March, at ſeven o'clock in the morning, and ſtood to the ſouth-weſt, in expectation of falling

in with the iſland of Modoopapappa; the natives having aſſured us that it lay in that direction, within five hours ſail of Tahoora. About four in the afternoon, a large canoe overtook us, in which were ten perſons, who were inhabitants of Oneeheow, and were proceeding to Tahoora to catch birds; particularly tropic and man-of-war birds, which are ſaid to be very numerous in that place. It has already been obſerved, that the feathers of theſe birds are held in great eſteem, being principally uſed in the ornamental parts of their dreſs.

Not having ſeen the iſland at eight in the evening, we hauled to the northward till midnight, when we tacked and ſtood to the ſouth-eaſt till day-break the next morning; when Tahoora bore eaſt-north-eaſt, diſtant about five or ſix leagues. We then ſteered weſt-ſouth-weſt, making a ſignal for the Diſcovery to ſpread four miles upon our ſtarboard beam. We ſtood on till five, and then made a ſignal for the Diſcovery to come under our ſtern, having given over all hopes of ſeeing Modoopapappa. We ſuppoſed it might lie more ſoutherly from Tahoora, than the direction which we had taken; though it is very poſſible that we might have paſſed it in the night, it having been deſcribed to us as a very ſmall iſland, and almoſt even with the ſea.

On the 17th, we ſteered weſt; Captain Clerke meaning to keep nearly in the ſame parallel of lat.-

latitude, till we made the longitude of Awatſka Bay; and then to ſteer north for the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, which was alſo fixed on as our rendezvous, if we ſhould happen to ſeparate. This track was choſen, becauſe we ſuppoſed it to be yet unexplored, and we might probably meet with ſome new iſlands in our paſſage.

From the time of our loſing ſight of Tahoora, till the afternoon of the 18th, we had hardly ſeen a bird; we then ſaw ſeveral boobies, and man-of-war birds, which induced us to look out ſharply for land. The wind leſſened towards the evening; and the heavy ſwell, which made the ſhips labour exceedingly on the 16th and 17th, was conſiderably abated. No land appeared the next day; and at noon we ſteered weſt by ſouth, in expectation of finding the trade winds (which generally blew from the eaſt by north) freſher as we advanced. It is remarkable, that, though no birds appeared in the forenoon, we had a multitude of boobies and man-of-war birds about us in the evening. Whence we ſuppoſed that we had paſſed the land, not far diſtant from where the former flights appeared, and were approaching ſome other iſland.

We had fine weather and a moderate wind, till the 23d, when it increaſed to a ſtrong gale, and continued about twelve hours. Afterwards it became more moderate, and remained ſo till

noon on the 25th; at which time we had only a very light air.

In the morning of the 26th, we imagined we ſaw land to the weſt-ſouth-weſt; but we diſcovered our miſtake, after ſailing ſixteen leagues in that direction; and, night approaching, we again ſteered weſt. We purſued this courſe, without much alteration in the wind, till the 29th, when it ſhifted about, and was in the weſt for a few hours in the night; the weather being cloudy, accompanied with a great deal of rain. For ſome days paſt, we had met with ſeveral turtles, one of which was ſo remarkably ſmall, as not to exceed three inches in length. We were again viſited by man-of-war birds, and an uncommon kind of boobies. They were entirely white, except a black ſpot at the tip of each wing, and had a ſtrong reſemblance of gannets, at firſt ſight.

The continuation of the light winds, with the very unſettled ſtate of the weather, and the little expectation we had of any change for the better, induced Captain Clerke to give up his plan of keeping within the tropical latitudes. In conſequence of which, we began, at ſix o'clock this evening, to ſteer north-weſt by north. The light winds almoſt conſtantly prevailed, after our departure from the Sandwich Iſlands; during which time, the air was hot and ſultry; the thermometer being generally from 80° to 83°. We had

alſo a conſiderable ſwell from the north-eaſt, in which the ſhips were ſtrained exceedingly.

On the 1ſt of April, in the morning, the wind changed to the north-eaſt by eaſt, and continued to blow a freſh breeze till the 4th, in the morning, when it altered two points. At noon it blew a ſtrong gale, which continued till the 5th, in the afternoon. It then changed its direction to the ſouth-eaſt, and blew moderate, with much rain. We kept ſteering, all this time, to the north-weſt, againſt a ſlow current from that quarter. On the 4th, when our latitude was 26° 17′, and our longitude 173° 30′, we ſaw great numbers of what are called (by the ſailors) Portugueſe men-of-war, *holothuria phyſalis*. Vaſt quantities of oceanic birds likewiſe attended us, among which we diſcovered the ſheer-water and albatroſs.

About noon on the 6th, we loſt the trade wind. We were then in the latitude of 29° 50′, and the longitude of 170° 1′. Our old running ropes having been continually breaking in the late gales, we reeved all the new ones we had left, and made other neceſſary preparations for the different climate we were ſhortly to encounter. The fine weather, which we experienced between the tropics, had not been miſemployed. The carpenters were ſufficiently engaged in repairing the boats. Our beſt bower cable having received ſo much injury in Karakakooah Bay, and off Oneeheow, as

to occaſion forty fathoms to be cut from it; we converted that, together with ſome other old cordage, into ſpun-yarn, and applied it to various purpoſes. By which means, many of our people were kept wholly employed by the boatſwain. Beſides, it was now become a troubleſome, and laborious part of our duty, to air the ſails, &c. which were continually growing wet, from the leakineſs of the ſides and decks of the veſſels.

There were other cares, which had the preſervation of the health of the crews for their object; and theſe continually occupied a great number of our hands. Captain Cook's eſtabliſhed orders of airing the beds, having fires between decks, ſmoking them with gun-powder, and waſhing them with vinegar, were invariably obſerved. Even the mending of the ſailors old jackets, was now become a duty of importance. Thoſe who are unacquainted with the habits and diſpoſition of ſeamen, require to be informed, that they are ſo accuſtomed to be directed by their officers, reſpecting the care of themſelves, that they contract the thoughtleſſneſs of infants. It is very certain, that had our people been ſuffered to act according to their own diſcretion, the whole crew would have been naked, before half the completion of the voyage. It might naturally be ſuppoſed, from their having experienced a voyage to the north the laſt year, that they would be thoroughly ſenſible of the neceſſity of paying attention

tion to theſe matters; but theſe reflections never operated upon them; for, as ſoon as we returned to the tropical climates, their fur jackets, and other articles calculated for cold climates, were kicked about the decks as uſeleſs and inſignificant; though every one among us knew we were to make another voyage towards the Pole. They were, however, taken up and put into caſks, by the officers, and, about this time, reſtored to their proper owners.

We perceived in the afternoon, ſome of the ſheathing floating by the ſhip: and diſcovered, upon examination, that about fourteen feet had been waſhed off under the lar-board bow; where the leak was ſuppoſed to have been, which had kept the people employed at the pumps, ever ſince our departure from the Sandwich Iſlands; making twelve inches water an hour. A number of ſmall crabs, of a pale blue colour, we had this day a ſight of; and were again accompanied by ſheer-waters and albatroſſes. In the night-time, the thermometer ſunk eleven degrees; and, though it was then as high as 59°, we endured much from the cold; our feelings not being yet reconciled to that degree of temperature.

We had a freſh wind from the north, till Thurſday the 8th, in the morning: it then became more moderate, and was accompanied with fair weather. Afterwards it changed its direction to the eaſt, and then to the ſouth.

About noon, on the 9th, we were in the latitude of 32° 16′, and in the longitude of 166° 40′. On the 10th, we croſſed the track by which the Spaniſh galleons paſs from the Manillas to Acapulco, and expected to have ſeen the iſland of Rica de Plata; which, according to De Liſle's chart, which points out the route of thoſe ſhips, ought to have appeared. Its latitude is there mentioned to be 33° 30′ north, and its longitude 166° eaſt. Though ſo far advanced to the northward, we this day ſaw a tropic bird; and ſeveral other kinds of oceanic birds; ſuch as ſheerwaters, albatroſſes, puffins, and ſea-parrots.

At noon, on the 11th, our latitude was 35° 30′, and our longitude 165° 45′. We this day ſaw plenty of ſea-birds, and ſeveral bunches of ſea-weed. The Diſcovery alſo paſſed a log of wood; but no other ſigns of land appeared.

On the 12th, the wind veered to the eaſt, and blew ſo ſtrong a gale, as to oblige us to ſtrike our top-gallant yards. We happened, unfortunately, to be upon the moſt diſadvantageous tack for our leak. But, having always kept it under with the hand-pumps, it gave us but little concern till Tueſday the 13th, at ſix in the afternoon, when a ſudden inundation deluged the whole ſpace between decks, and alarmed us much. The water, which had made its way into the coal-hole, not finding a paſſage into the well, had forced up the platforms over it, and inſtantaneouſly ſet every thing

thing afloat. Our ſituation was the more diſtreſſing, as we could not immediately diſcover any means of relieving ourſelves. It could be of no ſervice to place a pump through the upper-decks into the coal-hole; and, it was become impracticable to bale the water out with buckets. We had, therefore, no other expedient left, than to cut a hole through the bulk-head, which ſeparated the coal-hole from the fore-hold, and thus form a paſſage for the water into the well. Before this could be effected, however, the caſks of dry proviſions were to be got out of the fore-hold, which took us the remainder of the night; the carpenters, therefore, could not get at the partition till the next morning. The paſſage being made, the principal part of the water ran into the well, when we were enabled to get out the reſt with buckets. The leak was now greatly increaſed, inſomuch that half our people were conſtantly employed in pumping and baleing, till the 15th, at noon. Our men ſubmitted chearfully to this exceſſive fatigue; and, to add to their ſufferings, they had not a dry place to ſleep in: but, in order to make them ſome amends, they were permitted to have their full allowance of grog.

As the weather grew more moderate, and the ſwell abated, we cleared away the reſt of the caſks from the fore-hold, and made a proper paſſage for the water to the pumps. We ſaw a piece of

drift

drift wood, of a greeniſh hue, and ſounded, but found no bottom with a hundred and ſixty fathoms of line. At noon, this day, we were in the latitude of 41° 52′, and in the longitude of 161° 15′.

At noon, on the 16th, our latitude was 42° 12′, and our longitude 160° 5′; and, being near the ſituation where De Gama is ſaid to have ſeen a great extent of land, we were glad of an opportunity of contributing to remove the doubts, if any yet remained, reſpecting this pretended diſcovery. It is ſomewhat remarkable that it cannot be diſcovered who this John de Gama was, when he lived, or at what time he made this diſcovery.

Muller relates, that the firſt account of it was in a chart publiſhed by Texeira, in 1649; who places it between the latitudes of 44° and 45°, and calls it "land ſeen by John de Gama, in a voyage from China to New Spain." Why the French geographers have removed it five degrees to the eaſtward, we cannot comprehend; unleſs we ſuppoſe it to have been to make room for another freſh diſcovery made by the Dutch, called Company's Land.

The wind was very unſettled the whole day, and blew in freſh guſts, which were ſucceeded by dead calms. Though theſe were not unpromiſing appearances, yet, after ſtanding off and on the whole day, without perceiving land, we ſteered to the northward; not chuſing to loſe much time

in

in ſearch of an object, the exiſtence of which was univerſally diſbelieved. The whole of the 16th, our people were employed in drying their wet things, and in airing the ſhips below.

The increaſing inclemency of the northern climate was now ſeverely felt. On the 18th, in the morning, we were in the latitude of 45° 40′, and the longitude of 160° 25′. We had ſnow, ſleet, and ſtrong gales from the ſouth-weſt. Conſidering the ſeaſon of the year, and the quarter from which the wind came, this is rather a remarkable circumſtance. In the day-time of the 19th, the thermometer remained at the freezing point, and fell to 29° at four in the morning. On comparing the degree of heat, during the ſultry weather at the beginning of this month, with the extreme cold which we now endured, ſome idea may be formed of our ſufferings upon ſo rapid a change.

The gale which we had on the 18th, had ſplit moſt of the ſails we had bent; and, as theſe were our ſecond ſuit, we were obliged to have recourſe to our laſt and beſt ſet. Captain Clerk's difficulties were augmented by the ſea being generally ſo rough, and the ſhips ſo extremely leaky, that there was no place to repair the ſails in, except his apartments, which was a ſerious inconvenience to him, in his declining ſtate of health.

At noon on the 20th, our latitude was 49° 45′ north, and our longitude 161° 15′ eaſt, and we earneſtly

earneſtly expected to fall in with the coaſt of Aſia; when the wind ſhifted to the north, where it continued the day following. Though our progreſs was thus retarded, we were conſiderably refreſhed by the fair weather it produced. On the 21ſt, in the forenoon, we had the ſight of a whale, and a land-bird; and, as the water appeared muddy, we ſounded in the afternoon, but could not find ground with an hundred and forty fathoms of line. In the courſe of the three preceding days, we ſaw a large quantity of wild-fowl, ſomewhat reſembling ducks. This uſually indicates the vicinity of land, but no other ſigns of it had been ſeen ſince the 16th, in which time we had ſailed an hundred and fifty leagues and upwards.

The wind ſhifted to the north-eaſt, on the 22d, and was attended with miſty weather. The cold was ſo intenſe and the ropes frozen to ſuch a degree, that it was a buſineſs of great difficulty to force them through the blocks. On comparing our preſent poſition with the ſouthern parts of Kamtſchatka, as given in the Ruſſian charts, Captain Clerke thought it might be dangerous to run on towards the land all night. We therefore tacked at ten, ſounded, and had ground with ſeventy fathoms of line.

At ſix in the morning on the 23d, the fog clearing away, we ſaw mountains covered with ſnow, and a high conical rock, at the diſtance of about three or four leagues. Soon after we had taken

this

this imperfect view, a thick fog again appeared. According to our maps, we were now but eight leagues from the entrance of Awatſka Bay; therefore, when the weather cleared up, we ſtood in to take a nearer ſurvey of the country; when a moſt diſmal and dreary proſpect preſented itſelf. The coaſt is ſtraight and uniform, without bays, or inlets; from the ſhore, the ground riſes in moderate hills, and behind them are ranges of mountains, whoſe ſummits penetrate the clouds. The whole was covered with ſnow, except the ſides of ſome cliffs, which roſe too perpendicularly from the ſea, to permit the ſnow to lie upon them.

The wind blew ſtrong from the north-eaſt, with hazy weather and ſleet, from the 24th to the 28th; the thermometer, during that time, being never higher than 30½°. The ſhip reſembled a complete maſs of ice; the ſhrouds being ſo incruſted with it, as to double their dimenſions; and, indeed, the oldeſt ſeaman among us had never experienced ſuch continued ſhowers of ſleet, and that extremity of cold, which we had now to encounter. The inclemency of the weather, the difficulty of working our ſhips, and the inceſſant duty required at the pumps, rendered the ſervice intolerable to many of our crew; ſome of whom were much froſt-bitten, and others were confined with colds. We continued ſtanding four hours on each tack, having ſoundings of ſixty fathoms,

fathoms, when within three leagues of the land; but no ſounding at double that diſtance.

We had, on the 25th, an imperfect glance of the entrance of Awatſka Bay, but could not preſume to venture into it, in the preſent condition of the weather. We again ſtood off, when we loſt ſight of the Diſcovery, which gave us little concern, being now almoſt arrived at the place of rendezvous.

In the morning of the 28th, the weather cleared up, with a light breeze continuing from the ſame quarter. Having a fine warm day, we were in expectation of a thaw, and therefore the men were buſied in taking the ice from the rigging, ſails, &c. that it might not fall upon our heads. At noon, when our latitude was 52° 44′, and our longitude 159°, the entrance of Awatſka Bay bore north-weſt, at the diſtance of about three or four leagues; and, at three in the afternoon, we ſtood in with a fair wind from the ſouthward, having ſoundings from twenty-two to ſeven fathoms.

The mouth of Awatſka Bay opens in the direction of north north-weſt. On the ſouth ſide, the land is moderately high: it riſes, to the northward, into a bluff-head. Three remarkable rocks lie in the channel between them, not far from the north-eaſt ſide; and, on the oppoſite ſide, a ſingle rock of a conſiderable ſize. There is a look-out houſe on the north-head, which is uſed as a light-houſe,

A VIEW of KARAKAKOOA in OWHYHEE.



Webber del.

P. Mazell Sc.

A VIEW of KARAKAKOOA in OWHYHEE.

BRITISH
6 AU 75
MUSEUM

houſe, when any of the Ruſſian ſhips are expected upon the coaſt. It had a flag-ſtaff in it; but there did not appear to be any perſon there.

Paſſing the mouth of the bay, which extends about four miles in length, a circular baſon preſents itſelf, of about twenty-five miles in circumference; in which, at about four o'clock, we anchored in ſix fathom water; fearing to run foul of a ſhoal mentioned by Muller to lie in the channel. Great quantities of looſe ice drifted with the tide in the middle of the bay; but the ſhores were wholly blocked up with it. Plenty of wild-fowl, of various kinds, were ſeen; alſo large flights of Greenland pigeons; together with ravens and eagles. We looked at every corner of the bay, to ſee if we could diſcern the town of St. Peter and St. Paul, which, from the accounts we had received at Oonalaſhka, we ſuppoſed to be a place of ſtrength and conſequence. At laſt we perceived, to the north-eaſt, ſome miſerable log-houſes, and a few conical huts, amounting, in the whole, to about thirty; which, from their ſituation, we concluded to be Petropaulowſka. In juſtice, however, to the hoſpitable treatment we found here, it may not be amiſs to anticipate the reader's curioſity, by aſſuring him that our diſappointment proved in the end, a matter of entertainment to us. In this wretched extremity of the earth, beyond conception barbarous and inhoſpitable, out of the reach of civilization, bound

and barricadoed with ice, and covered with ſummer ſnow, we experienced the tendereſt feelings of humanity, joined to a nobleneſs of mind, and elevation of ſentiment, which would have done honour to any clime or nation.

In the morning of the 29th, at day-light, Mr. King was ſent with the boats to examine the bay, and to preſent the letters to the Ruſſian commander, which we had brought from Oonalaſhka. We proceeded towards the village juſt mentioned, and, having advanced as far as we could with the boats, we got upon the ice, which reached about half a mile from the ſhore. Mr. King was attended by Mr. Webber, and two of the ſeamen, whilſt the maſter went to finiſh the ſurvey; the jolly boat being left to carry us back.

Probably the inhabitants had not, by this time, ſeen either the ſhips or the boats; for, even on the ice, no appearance of a living creature could be ſeen in the town. When farther advanced on the ice, a few men were ſeen hurrying backwards and forwards; and afterwards a ſledge with one perſon in it, and drawn by dogs, approached us.

Struck with this unuſual ſight, and admiring the civility of this ſtranger, who we ſuppoſed was coming to our aſſiſtance, we were aſtoniſhed to ſee him turn ſhort round, and direct his courſe towards the *oſtrog*. We were equally chagrined and diſappointed at this abrupt departure; eſpecially

cially as our journey over the ice began to be both difficult and dangerous. At every ſtep we took, we ſunk almoſt knee-deep in the ſnow; and, though there was tolerable footing at the bottom, the weak parts of the ice were not diſcoverable, and we were continually expoſed to the riſk of breaking through it. Indeed this accident actually happened to Mr. King; but, by the aſſiſtance of a boat-hook, he was enabled to get upon firm ice again.

The nearer we approached the ſhore, we found the ice ſtill more broken. The ſight of another ſledge advancing towards us, however, afforded us ſome comfort. But, inſtead of coming to relieve us, the driver ſtopt ſhort, and called out to us. Mr. King immediately held up Iſmyloff's letters. In conſequence of which, he turned about, and went full ſpeed back again; followed with the execrations of ſome of our party. Unable to draw any concluſion from this unaccountable behaviour, we ſtill proceeded towards the *oſtrog*, with the greateſt circumſpection; and, when at the diſtance of about a quarter of a mile from it, we obſerved a body of armed men advancing towards us. To avoid giving them any alarm, and to preſerve the moſt peaceable appearance, Mr. King and Mr. Webber marched in front, and the men, who had boat-hooks in their hands, were ordered in the rear. The armed party conſiſted of about thirty ſoldiers, preceded

by a perſon with a cane in his hand. Within a few paces of us, he halted, and drew up his men in a martial order. Mr. King preſented Iſmyloff's letters to him, and vainly endeavoured to make him underſtand that we were Engliſh, and had brought theſe diſpatches from Oonalaſhka.

Having attentively examined us, he conducted us towards the village in ſolemn ſilence, frequently halting his men, and making them perform different parts of their manual exerciſe; in order to ſhew us, perhaps, that, if we ſhould preſume to offer any violence, we ſhould have to deal with thoſe who knew what they were about.

During the whole of this time, Mr. King was in his wet clothes, ſhivering with cold; yet he could not avoid being diverted with this military parade, though it was attended by an unſeaſonable delay. Arriving, at length, at the habitation of the commanding officer of the party, we were uſhered in; and, after giving orders to the military without doors, our hoſt appeared, accompanied by the ſecretary of the port. One of the letters from Iſmyloff was now opened, and the other ſent expreſs to Bolcheretſk, a town on the weſt ſide of Kamtſchatka, and the place of reſidence of the Ruſſian commander of this province.

It appears extraordinary, that the natives had not ſeen the Reſolution the preceding day, when we anchored in the bay; nor this morning till our boats

boats approached the ice. The firſt ſight of the ſhip, we underſtood, had ſtruck them with a conſiderable panic. The garriſon was inſtantly put under arms; two field-pieces were placed before the commander's houſe; and powder, ſhot, and lighted matches were all in readineſs.

The officer, who had conducted us to his houſe, was a ſerjeant; and alſo the commander of the *oſtrog*. After he had recovered from the alarm which our arrival had produced, the kindneſs and hoſpitality of his behaviour was aſtoniſhing. His houſe, indeed, was intolerably hot, but remarkably neat and clean. After Mr. King had changed his clothes, by putting on a complete ſuit of the ſerjeant's, at his earneſt requeſt; we were requeſted to partake of a dinner, which was doubtleſs the beſt he could procure; and, conſidering our viſit was unexpected, was ingeniouſly conducted. To have prepared ſoup and *bouilli*, would have required ſome time; inſtead of which, we had ſome cold beef ſliced, with boiling water poured over it. After that we were regaled with a large roaſted bird, the taſte of which was moſt delicious, though we were unacquainted with its ſpecies. Having eaten a part of this, it was removed, and fiſh were ſerved up, dreſſed in two different methods. Soon after which the bird appeared again in ſavoury and ſweet *pates*. Our liquor was ſuch as the Ruſſians diſtinguiſh by the name of *quaſs*, and was the moſt indifferent

part of our entertainment. The ſerjeant's wife ſerved up ſeveral of the diſhes, and was not permitted to ſit down at table with us.

Our repaſt being finiſhed, during which our converſation was limited to a few bows, and other perſonal tokens of mutual reſpect, we ſtrove to explain to our hoſt, the occaſion of our viſit to this port. Probably Iſmyloff had written to them on this ſubject, in the letters we had delivered, as we made him readily conceive our meaning; but, as there was not a perſon in the place, who knew any other language than Ruſſian or Kamtſchadale, we found it extremely difficult to comprehend what he endeavoured to communicate to us. After much time ſpent in our attempts to underſtand each other, the ſum of the intelligence we had received appeared to be, that, though we could not be ſupplied with proviſions or ſtores at this place, yet thoſe articles were to be procured, in great plenty, at Bolcheretſk. That he doubted not, but the commander would readily ſupply us with what we wanted; but that, till he had received his orders, neither he, nor any of the natives, could even venture on board the veſſel.

It being now time for us to depart, and as Mr. King's clothes were not yet dry, he again had recourſe to the ſerjeant's benevolence for his leave to carry thoſe on board which he had borrowed of him. This requeſt was chearfully complied

plied with; and a ſledge, with five dogs, and a driver, was inſtantly provided for each of our party. This mode of conveyance afforded high entertainment for the ſailors; and they were delighted ſtill more, when they found that the two boat-hooks had a ſledge appropriated ſolely to themſelves. Theſe ſledges are ſo light, and ſo admirably conſtructed for the purpoſes they are intended, that they went ſafely and expeditiouſly over the ice, which we ſhould have found extremely difficult to have paſſed on foot.

The boats, on our return, were towing the Reſolution towards the village; and, at ſeven, we moored cloſe to the ice; the entrance of the bay bearing ſouth by eaſt, and the *oſtrog* north, at the diſtance of one mile and a half.

On the morning of the 30th, the caſks and cables were taken to the quarter-deck, to lighten the veſſel forward; and the carpenters proceeded to ſtop the leak, which had occaſioned us ſo much trouble. It appeared to have been occaſioned by ſome ſheathing falling off from the larboard-bow, and the oakum having been waſhed out from between the planks. We had ſuch warm weather in the middle of the day, that the ice began to break away very faſt, and almoſt choaked up the entrance of the bay. Several of our officers waited upon the ſerjeant, who received them with great civility; and Captain Clerke made him a preſent of two bottles of rum, think-

ing he could not ſend him any thing more acceptable. In return, he received twenty fine trouts, and ſome excellent fowls of the grouſe kind. Though the bay ſwarmed with ducks and Greenland-pigeons, our ſportſmen had no ſucceſs, for they were ſo exceedingly ſhy as not to come within ſhot.

On the 1ſt of May, in the morning, we ſaw the Diſcovery ſtanding in the bay; a boat was diſpatched to her aſſiſtance, and ſhe was moored, in the afternoon, cloſe by the Reſolution. We were then informed, that, after the weather became clear on the 28th, (the day ſhe parted company) they were to leeward of the bay; and the following day, when they got abreaſt of it, ſeeing the entrance choaked up with ice, they fired guns and ſtood off, ſuppoſing we could not be here; but afterwards, perceiving it was only drift ice, they ventured to come in.

On Sunday the 2d, we had heavy ſhowers of ſnow, and the weather was ſo exceedingly unſettled, that the carpenters could not proceed in their buſineſs. In the evening the thermometer ſtood at 28°, and the froſt in the night was remarkably ſevere.

Two ſledges being obſerved to drive into the village, on the morning of the 3d, Mr. King was ordered on ſhore, to learn whether any anſwer was arrived from the commander of Kamtſchatka, which the ſerjeant informed us might be reaſonably

reaſonably expected about this time. The diſtance from Bolcheretſk to St. Peter and St. Paul's, is one hundred and thirty-five Engliſh miles. The dogs were ſent off with our diſpatches, on the 29th at noon; and returned with an anſwer, as we were afterwards informed, early this morning: ſo that they performed a journey of two hundred and ſeventy miles, in a little more than three days and a half.

For the preſent, however, the return of the commander's anſwer was concealed from us; and, on Mr. King's arrival at the ſerjeant's, he was informed that he ſhould hear from him the next day. While Mr. King was on ſhore, the boat in which he came, and another belonging to the Diſcovery, were bound faſt by the ice. In this ſituation, the Diſcovery's launch was ſent to their aſſiſtance, which ſoon partook of the ſame fate; and, ſhortly after, they were ſurrounded with ice to a great extent. Thus ſituated, we were obliged to continue on ſhore till the evening; when, giving over the thoughts of getting the boats off at that time, ſome of us were conveyed in ſledges to the edge of the ice, where the boats from the ſhip took us off, and the reſt continued all night on ſhore.

It froze extremely hard during the night; but, in the morning of the 4th, the floating ice was drifted away by a change of wind; and the boats were

were ſet at liberty without ſuſtaining the ſmalleſt damage.

At ten in the forenoon, ſeveral ſledges arriving at the edge of the ice, a boat was ſent from the ſhip to conduct thoſe who were in them on board. One of them proved to be a Ruſſian merchant from Bolcheretſk, whoſe name was Fedoſitſch; and the other a German, named Port, with diſpatches from Major Behm, commander of Kamtſchatka, to Captain Clerke.

Arriving at the edge of the ice, and ſeeing diſtinctly the magnitude of the ſhips, which were then within two hundred yards of them, they were exceedingly alarmed; and, before they ventured to embark, ſtipulated that two of our boat's crew ſhould remain on ſhore, as hoſtages for their ſafety. It afterwards appeared, that Iſmyloff, in the epiſtle he had written to the commander, (for reaſons which we cannot comprehend) had mentioned our veſſels as two ſmall trading boats; and that the ſerjeant, having ſeen the ſhips but at a diſtance, had not rectified that miſtake.

After they were come on board, we perceived, by their timorous and cautious behaviour, that they entertained ſome very extraordinary apprehenſions. They were greatly elated, however, when the German found a perſon among us, with whom he could enter into converſation. Mr. Webber ſpoke that language fluently, and convinced them, though not without difficulty, that

we

we were Engliſhmen and friends. Mr. Port was introduced to Captain Clerke, to whom he delivered the commander's letter. It was written in the German language, and merely complimental, giving him and his officers an invitation to Bolcheretſk. Mr. Port alſo told Captain Clerke, that the Major had been miſinformed, reſpecting the ſize of the ſhips, and the ſervice in which we were engaged; Iſmyloff having called our two veſſels Engliſh packet-boats, and warned him to be cautious; intimating, as he ſuppoſed, that he ſuſpected we were pirates. This letter, he ſaid, had given birth to various conjectures about us at Bolcheretſk: that the Major apprehended we might be on a trading plan, and therefore had ſent a merchant to us; but that the officer, next in command, imagined we were French, arrived with ſome hoſtile intentions, and that meaſures ought to be purſued accordingly. He added, that the Major had been obliged to exert all his authority to prevent the inhabitants from quitting the town; ſo much were they alarmed, from their apprehenſion of our being French.

Theſe alarms were principally occaſioned by ſome circumſtances in an inſurrection which had happened at Bolcheretſk, not many years ago, in which the commander was killed. We were told, that Beniowſki, an exiled Poliſh officer, ſeeing the town in great confuſion, took that opportunity of ſeizing upon a galliot, lying at the entrance

entrance of the Bolſchoireeka, and forced a ſufficient number of Ruſſian ſailors on board to navigate her; that part of the crew were put on ſhore at the Kourile Iſlands, and Iſmyloff among the reſt; who, as we have already obſerved, puzzled us exceedingly with a narrative of this tranſaction at Oonalaſhka; though we then found it difficult to underſtand all the circumſtances attending it: that he had a view of Japan; made Luconia, where he was inſtructed how to ſteer to Canton; that arriving there, he got a paſſage to France in one of the French India ſhips; moſt of the Ruſſians having alſo returned to Europe in French ſhips; and afterwards proceeded to Peterſburgh. We gathered the circumſtances of the above ſtory, from three of Beniowſki's crew, whom we met with in the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul.

We received a farther corroboration of theſe facts, on our arrival at Canton, from the gentlemen belonging to the Engliſh factory there; who informed us, that a perſon in a Ruſſian galliot had arrived there, who told them he came from Kamtſchatka, and that the French factory had furniſhed him with a paſſage to Europe.

We were much diverted with the fears and apprehenſions of theſe people; and eſpecially with an account, given by Mr. Port, of the ſerjeant's extreme caution the day before. On ſeeing Mr. King and ſome other gentlemen come on ſhore, he

he concealed him and the Ruſſian merchant in the kitchen, to give them an opportunity of liſtening to our converſation with each other, in order to diſcover, whether we were Engliſhmen or not.

Imagining, from the appearance of Mr. Port, that he might probably be the commander's ſecretary, he was conſidered in that light, and was invited, with the Ruſſian merchant, to dine with Captain Clerke. Soon, however, we began to ſuſpect, from the behaviour of the merchant, that Mr. Port was no more than a common ſervant; but, not chooſing to ſacrifice our little comforts to our pride, we avoided an explanation, by not permitting ſuch a queſtion to be propoſed to him; he therefore continued upon a footing of equality with us, and we, in return, reaped the advantage of his abilites as a linguiſt.

## CHAP. II.

*Stores and Provisions extremely scarce at St. Peter and St. Paul—Exorbitant Demands of a Merchant—A party dispatched to Bolcheretsk in pursuit of Stores and Provisions—Proceed up the River Awatska—Pass the Night in a Marquée on the River-side—Civility and Hospitality of the Town of Karatchin—Dresses of the Kamtschadales—Prosecute our Journey on Sledges—Curious Account of that Mode of travelling—Arrive at Natcheekin—Remarkable hot Spring there—Embark on the Bolchoireka River—Arrival at the Capital—Formal Procession into that Town—Generosity and Hospitality of Major Behm, Commander of the Garrison—Bolcheretsk described—Presents received from the Major—Entertainments of Dancing—Very affecting Departure from Bolcheretsk—Return to the Ships—Remarkable Instance of Generosity in the Sailors—Major Behm carries Dispatches to Petersburgh—His Departure, and extraordinary Character.*

BY the assistance of our interpreter, we were now enabled to converse with the Russians, with some degree of facility; and the first objects of our enquiries, were, the means of procuring fresh provisions and naval stores; particularly the latter, for the want of which we had been long in

in great diſtreſs. It appeared, upon enquiry, that the whole country about the bay, could furniſh no other live cattle than two heifers; and theſe the ſerjeant engaged to procure for us. Our next applications were made to the merchant, whoſe terms for ſerving us were ſo exorbitant, that Captain Clerke thought it expedient to ſend an officer to the commander at Bolcheretſk, to learn the price of ſtores at that place. This determination being communicated to Mr. Port, he ſent an expreſs to the commander to acquaint him with our intentions, and to remove the ſuſpicions that were entertained, reſpecting the purpoſes of our voyage.

Captain Clerke fixed upon Mr. King for this ſervice, and ordered him to prepare for ſetting out the next day, together with Mr. Webber, who was to accompany him as interpreter. That day, and the next, however, proved too ſtormy for beginning a journey through ſo deſolate and wild a country; but, on the 7th of May, the weather became more favourable, and we ſet out in the ſhip's boats, early in the morning, in order to arrive at the entrance of the Awatſka at high water, on account of the ſhoals at the mouth of that river. The country boats were to meet us here, to conduct us up the ſtream. Captain Gore was alſo added to our party; and we were accompanied by Mr. Port and the Ruſſian merchant, with two coſſacks, having been previouſly

furniſhed with warm furred clothing; a very neceſſary precaution, as it began to ſnow briſkly immediately after our ſetting out. About eight o'clock, we were ſtopped by ſhoal water, within a mile of the mouth of the river; when ſome Kamtſchadales took us and our baggage, in ſome ſmall canoes, and conveyed us over a bank of ſand, which the rapidity of the river had thrown up, and which, we were informed, was continually ſhifting. Having paſſed this ſhoal, the water again deepened, and we were furniſhed with a commodious boat, reſembling a Norway yawl, to convey us up the river; together with canoes for the reception of our baggage.

The breadth of the mouth of the Awatſka is about a quarter of a mile, but it gradually narrowed as we advanced. Having proceeded a few miles, we paſſed ſeveral branches; many of which, we were told, emptied themſelves into other parts of the bay; and that ſome of thoſe, on the left, ran into the Paratounca river. For the firſt ten miles, the general direction of the river, from the bay, is to the north; and afterwards it turns to the weſtward. Except this bend, it chiefly preſerves a ſtraight courſe; and flows through a low flat country, to the diſtance of thirty miles from the ſea, which is ſubject to frequent inundations. Six men were employed in puſhing us on with long poles, three of them being at each end of the boat; and proceeded againſt the ſtream, at

the rate of about three miles an hour. Our conductors endured this ſevere labour for ten hours; ſtopping only once, and that for a ſhort ſpace of time, to take a little refreſhment.

Being told, at our firſt ſetting out, that we could eaſily reach Karatchin that night, we were greatly diſappointed to find ourſelves fifteen miles from that place at ſun-ſet. This was attributed to the delay in paſſing the ſhoals, both at the entrance of the river, and in many other places.

Our men being exceedingly fatigued, and as the difficulty of navigating the river would have increaſed by the darkneſs of the night, we declined all thoughts of proceeding on our journey that evening: we therefore fixed upon a place that was tolerably well ſheltered, and, clearing it of the ſnow, erected a ſmall marquée, which we had providentially taken with us; and, with the aſſiſtance of a good fire, and ſome excellent punch, paſſed the night agreeably. Our principal inconvenience was, the being obliged to keep at a conſiderable diſtance from the fire; for, as ſoon as it was lighted, it thawed every part round it into an abſolute puddle. The Kamtſchadales were extremely alert and expeditious in erecting our marquée, and cooking our proviſions; but we were much ſurprized at finding they had brought with them their utenſils for making tea, conſidering it as a moſt intolerable hardſhip if they can-

not, two or three times a day, regale themſelves with drinking tea.

As ſoon as it was light, in the morning, we proceeded on our journey, and, before we had made much progreſs, were met by the *Toion*, or chief of Karatchin, who, being apprized of our coming, had provided canoes that were better accommodated for navigating the higher parts of the river. A commodious veſſel, (made by laſhing two canoes together) furniſhed with fur cloaks, and lined with bear-ſkins, was alſo procured for us. We now proceeded rapidly, the Toion's people being remarkably expert in this kind of buſineſs. At ten we arrived at the *oſtrog*, named Keratchin, and the ſeat of his command; where we were received by the Kamtſchadale men and women, and ſome Ruſſian ſervants belonging to the merchant, Fedoſitch. They were all attired in their beſt habiliments; thoſe of the women being gay and pleaſing, and conſiſting of a looſe robe of white nankeen, gathered cloſe round the neck, and faſtened with a ſilk collar. A ſhort jacket, without ſleeves, was worn over this, conſiſting of different coloured nankeens; and they had petticoats made of a ſlight Chineſe ſilk. Their ſhifts, which were alſo made of ſilk, had ſleeves extending to the wriſts; and their heads were bound with coloured ſilk handkerchiefs, which entirely concealed the hair of the married women; but the unmarried ones placed the handkerchief under

the

the hair, permitting it to flow looſely down the ſhoulders.

Karatchin was pleaſantly ſituated on the ſide of the river, and was compoſed of three log-houſes, nineteen *balagans*, or ſummer habitations, and three *jourts*, which are houſes under ground. The *Toion*, to whoſe dwelling we were then conducted, was a plain decent man, ſprung from a Ruſſian mother, and a Kamtſchadale father. His houſe, like all others in this country, conſiſted of only two apartments. All the furniture in the outer room, was a long narrow table, with a bench round it; and the inner apartment, which was the kitchen, was alſo very ſcantily furniſhed. But, the hearty welcome, and kind attention of our hoſt, amply compenſated for the poverty of his habitation.

The wife of the *Toion* was an excellent cook, and ſerved us with various ſorts of fiſh and game, and different kinds of heath-berries, which had been preſerved ſince the laſt year. Whilſt we were dining in this miſerable hut, the gueſts of abſolute ſtrangers, and at the extremity of the habitable globe, a ſolitary half-worn pewter ſpoon attracted our attention. Its form was familiar to us, and the word *London* was ſtamped upon the back of it. It is impoſſible to expreſs the anxious hopes, and tender remembrances, this circumſtance excited in us. Thoſe who have been long abſent from their native country, will readily

conceive what inexpreſſible pleaſure ſuch trifling incidents can give.

Having now quitted the river, the next part of our journey was to be performed on ſledges; but the thaw had been ſo great in the day-time, as not to permit us to ſet out, till the ſnow was become hard and firm by the coldneſs of the evening. This furniſhed us with an opportunity of walking about the village, which was the only place in this country, that we had ſeen free from ſnow. It was ſituated on a flat, of about a mile and an half in circuit. The leaves of the trees were juſt budding, and the verdure was ſtrongly contraſted with the ſurrounding hills, which remained covered with ſnow. The ſoil appearing to be capable of producing common vegetables, we were ſurprized to find that not a ſpot of it was cultivated. Neither were the inhabitants poſſeſſed of cattle of any ſort. In ſhort, their ſituation, during the winter months, muſt be wretched beyond conception. They were now removing from their *jourts* to their *balagans*, which gave us an opportunity of obſerving both theſe ſorts of habitations. The people invited us, very civilly, into their houſes; chearfulneſs and content were viſible in every countenance, to which the approaching change of ſeaſon might perhaps contribute.

On returning to our hoſt's, ſupper was prepared for us, conſiſting of the ſame articles which compoſed our former repaſt. When we had finiſhed

our meal, we entertained the *Toion* and his wife with punch made of ſome of our ſpirits; and Captain Gore, with his wonted generoſity, made them ſome valuable preſents: after which, they retired to the kitchen, leaving us in the other room; on the benches of which we ſpread our bear-ſkins, and ſought a little repoſe; having firſt ſettled with our conductors, to proceed on our journey, when the ground was judged to be in a ſuitable condition.

The melancholy howlings of the dogs awakened us about nine the ſame evening. During the whole time our baggage was laſhing upon the ſledges, their horrid noiſe continued; but, when they were yoked, and prepared for travelling, a chearful yelping ſucceeded, which ceaſed the inſtant they marched off.

The annexed engraving will ſhew the figure of the ſledges: it was taken from one brought over by Mr. King, and now in the poſſeſſion of Sir Aſhton Lever. The length of the body is about four feet and an half, and the breadth one foot. It is made in the form of a creſcent, of light tough wood, faſtened together with wicker work; and, among the principal people, is elegantly ſtained with red and blue; the ſeat being covered with furs or bear-ſkins. It has four legs, about two feet in height, reſting on two long flat pieces of wood, of the breadth of five or ſix inches, extending a foot beyond the body of the ſledge, at

each end. Theſe turn up before, ſomewhat like a ſkait, and are ſhod with the bone of ſome ſea-animal. The carriage is ornamented, at the fore part with taſſels of coloured cloth, and leather thongs. It has a croſs bar, to which the harneſs is joined; and links of iron, or ſmall bells, are hanging to it, which, by the jingling, is ſuppoſed to encourage the dogs. They ſeldom carry more than one perſon at a time, who ſits aſide, with his feet on the lower part of the ſledge, having his baggage and proviſions, in a bundle behind him. The uſual number of dogs employed in drawing this carriage, is five; four of them yoked two and two, and the other acting as leader. The reins, being faſtened to the collar, inſtead of the head, have no great command; and are therefore uſually hung upon the ſledge; the driver depending principally on their obedience to his voice. Great care and attention are conſequently uſed in training up the leader, which frequently becomes very valuable on account of his ſteadineſs and docility; the ſum of forty roubles (or ten pounds) being no unuſual price for one of them. The rider has alſo a crooked ſtick, anſwering the purpoſe both of whip and reins; with which, by ſtriking in the ſnow, he can regulate the ſpeed of the dogs, or even ſtop them at his pleaſure. When they are inattentive to their duty, he often chaſtiſes them by throwing it at them. The dexterity of the riders, in pick-

ing

ing this ſtick up again, is very remarkable, and is the moſt difficult manœuvre in the exerciſe of their profeſſion: nor is it, indeed, ſurprizing that they ſhould be ſkilful in a practice in which they are ſo materially intereſted; for, they aſſured us, that if a driver ſhould happen to loſe his ſtick, the dogs immediately diſcover it; and, unleſs their leader is both ſteady and reſolute, they will inſtantly ſet off full ſpeed, and never ſtop till their ſtrength is exhauſted; or till the carriage is overturned and daſhed to pieces, or hurried down a precipice, when all are buried in the ſnow. The accounts of the ſpeed of theſe animals, and of the hardſhips and fatigues they ſuffer, would have appeared incredible, had they not been ſupported by the greateſt authority. We ourſelves were witneſſes of the extraordinary expedition with which the meſſenger returned, who had been diſpatched to Bolcheretſk with the news of our arrival at St. Peter and St. Paul's, though the ſnow was exceedingly ſoft. The Governor of Kamtſchatka aſſured us, that this journey was uſually performed in two days and an half; and that he had once received an expreſs from that harbour in twenty-three hours.

During the winter, the dogs are fed on the offals of dried and ſtinking fiſh; and, even this miſerable food is withheld from them, a day before they ſet out on a journey; and they are not permitted to eat a morſel of any thing till they

arrive at the end of it. They are frequently kept faſting for two entire days, in which time they will perform a journey of great extent. The ſhape of theſe dogs reſembles that of the Pomeranian breed, but they are conſiderably larger.

Not chuſing to rely upon our own ſkill, we had each of us a man to conduct the ſledge, which, in the condition the roads then were, proved a very laborious buſineſs: for, as the thaw had been prevalent in the vallies, through which was our regular road, we were obliged to travel along the ſides of the hills; our guides being under the neceſſity of ſupporting the ſledges, on the lower ſides, with their ſhoulders, for many miles together. Mr. King was attended by a good-natured Coſſack, who was ſo imperfect in his buſineſs, that he was continually overturned, which afforded entertainment to his companions. The party conſiſted of ten ſledges in the whole. That which conducted Captain Gore, was formed of two laſhed together, and was plentifully furniſhed with furs and bear-ſkins. It was drawn by ten dogs, yoked four abreaſt; and thoſe which were laded with heavy baggage, were drawn by the ſame number.

We had proceeded about four miles on our journey, when it began to rain, which, together with the darkneſs of the night, threw us into ſome confuſion. It was, after ſome little conſultation, agreed, that we ſhould continue where

we

we were, till day-light; we therefore ſecured our ſledges, wrapped ourſelves up in furs, and waited patiently for the morning. At three o'clock we were ſummoned to proceed; our guides expreſſing their apprehenſions, that if we waited any longer, the thaw would perhaps ſtop us, and prevent our advancing or returning. Though we had many difficulties to encounter, owing principally to the bad condition of the road, we got ſafe to an *oſtrog* about two in the afternoon. It is called Natcheekin, and is ſituated on a ſmall ſtream, which falls into the Bolchoireka, at ſome diſtance below the town. It is twenty-five miles from Karatchin; which, by their account, we could have compaſſed in four hours, had the froſt continued; but the ſnow was ſo ſoft that the poor animals ſunk up to their bellies at almoſt every ſtep; and itwas indeed ſurprizing that they ſhould be able to ſupport themſelves under ſo fatiguing a journey.

This inconſiderable *oſtrog* conſiſts of one log-houſe, the reſidence of the *Toion*, one *jourt*, and five *balagans*. We were received here with the ſame civility and hoſpitality as at Karatchin; and, in the afternoon, were conducted to a remarkable hot ſpring, at a ſmall diſtance from this village. Before we came very near it, we ſaw a riſing ſteam from it, as from a boiling caldron; and, when we approached it, we perceived a ſtrong ſulphureous effluvia. A baſon of about three feet in diameter,

diameter, is formed by the main ſpring; beſides which, there are ſeveral leſſer ſprings, of equal heat, in the adjacent ground; by which means the whole ſpot, conſiſting of about an acre, was ſo very hot that we could not remain two minutes in the ſame place. The water iſſuing from theſe ſprings, ſupplies a ſmall bathing pond, and afterwards a little rivulet, which conducts it into the river, at the diſtance of about an hundred and fifty yards. Great cures, they informed us, had been effected by this bath, in rheumatiſms, ſcorbutic ulcers, ſwelled and contracted joints, and many other diſorders. Where theſe ſprings flow, the ground is on a gentle aſcent; having a green hill of a moderate ſize behind it. Some plants ſeemed to thrive here with great luxuriance, among which we obſerved the wild garlick.

On the morning of the 10th, we embarked on the Bolchoireeka; and, going with the ſtream, expected to arrive at our journey's end the following day. Though Bolcheretſk is eighty miles from Natcheekin, we were informed, that, in the ſummer, when the melting of ſnow on the mountains has rendered the river full and rapid, the canoes have often gone there in a ſingle day: but now they told us we ſhould be much longer, the ice having broken up only three days before our arrival, and our's being the firſt boat that had attempted to paſs. There was but too much truth in this intelligence; for we were greatly impeded

peded by the ſhallows; and, though the ſtream was rapid in many places, we frequently had ripplings and ſhoals, and were under the neceſſity of hauling the boats over them. On each ſide of the river, the country was romantic, but not diverſified: the courſe of it being between craggy mountains, of a moſt dreary and barren aſpect; with nothing to vary the ſcene, except now and then the ſight of a bear, or a flock of wild-fowl. This, and the following night, we ſlept under our marquée, on the banks of the river, and ſuffered greatly from the ſeverity of the weather.

On the 12th, at day-light, we had paſſed the mountains, and were proceeding through a low extenſive plain, on which were a number of ſhrubby trees. At nine in the morning, we reached an *oſtrog*, called Opatchin, of about the ſame magnitude as Karatchin, and ſuppoſed to be fifty miles from Natcheekin. A ſerjeant and four Ruſſian ſoldiers had been here two days, waiting for our arrival; who inſtantly diſpatched a light boat to Bolcheretſk to give intelligence of our approach. A magnificent canoe, plentifully furniſhed with ſkins and furs, was prepared for our reception, and we were very commodiouſly equipped; but our fellow-travellers were excluded. It gave us ſome concern to be ſeparated from our old companion Mr. Port, who daily grew more ſhy and diſtant, as we drew nearer to the completion of our journey. He acknowledged,

ledged, indeed, before we ſet out, that he was not entitled to the reſpect we had ſhewn him; but, finding him diſcreet, and not preſuming, we had inſiſted on his faring as we did, throughout the journey. We performed the remainder of our paſſage, with the utmoſt eaſe and expedition; for, as we deſcended, the river grew more rapid, and had very few obſtructions.

On our approaching Kamtſchatka, we judged, from an appearance of great ſtir and buſtle, that our reception was to be in form. This circumſtance was diſagreeable to us, as decent clothing had long been ſcarce among us; and our travelling habits formed a ſtrange aſſemblage of the modes of India, Europe, and Kamtſchatka. To make a parade through the metropolis in this motley trim, we thought would appear ridiculous; and, as we obſerved a crowd of people collected on the banks of the river, and were informed that the commander would receive us at the water-ſide, we ſtopped at the houſe of a ſoldier, about a quarter of a mile before we came to the town. Here we diſpatched Mr. Port with a meſſage to his excellency, acquainting him, that, as ſoon as we had put off our travelling dreſſes, we would attend him at his own houſe to pay our reſpects to him; and entreated him not to think of waiting to conduct us. He perſiſted, however, in his reſolution of paying us this compliment, and we immediately proceeded to join him

at

at the entrance of the capital. We were all remarkably awkward and defective in making our firſt ſalutations; not having been accuſtomed to bowing and ſcraping, for at leaſt two years and an half. The commander received us in a moſt engaging manner; but we had the mortification to diſcover, that he had almoſt wholly forgot the French language; ſo that only Mr. Webber had the ſatisfaction of converſing with him, as he ſpoke the German, which was his native tongue.

Major Behm was accompanied by Captain Shmaleff, the next in command, and another officer; the whole body of merchants attended alſo. We were conducted to the commander's houſe, where we were politely and reſpectfully received by his lady; who had prepared tea and other refreſhments for us. The firſt compliments being over, Captain Gore deſired Mr. Webber to acquaint the Major, that we were diſtreſſed for want of naval ſtores, freſh proviſions, flour, and other neceſſaries; and that we were convinced we could not receive much aſſiſtance from him, in the country about Awatſka Bay, from what we had already ſeen and heard; that the impoſſibility of conveying heavy ſtores over the peninſula, at that ſeaſon, we were but too ſenſible of, from the difficulties we had encountered in our journey; and that we could not delay the proſecution of our voyage, to wait for any material change. Here the Major interrupted Mr. Webber,

ber, by obſerving, that we knew not what they were capable of doing; that he ſhould not beſtow a thought upon the difficulties of ſupplying our wants; he only wiſhed to know what articles we ſtood in need of, and the time he could be allowed for procuring them. After expreſſing our acknowledgments for his obliging condeſcenſion, we preſented him an account of the naval ſtores, cattle, and flour, we were directed to purchaſe; and informed him, that we intended to proſecute our voyage about the 5th of June.

After this, the converſation became more general, and it might naturally be ſuppoſed, that we were anxious to obtain ſome information reſpecting our native country. Having been three years abſent, we entertained the moſt flattering expectations, of receiving ſome intereſting intelligence from Major Behm: but we were greatly diſappointed, when he aſſured us, that he could not communicate any intelligence of a much later date than that of our quitting England. The commander, ſuppoſing we might be fatigued, and deſirous of repoſe, begged leave to conduct us to our lodgings, at about ſeven o'clock. It was uſeleſs to proteſt againſt a compliment, to which we had no other title than that of being ſtrangers. That alone, with this generous Livonian, was ſufficient to counterbalance every other conſideration. In going along, we paſſed two guard-houſes, where the men were

under

under arms in compliment to Captain Gore, and were conducted to a neat decent houſe, which the Major had appointed for our reſidence, while we continued at Kamtſchatka. We had two ſentinels poſted at our door, and a ſerjeant's guard in an adjoining houſe. Having diſpoſed of us in our apartments, the Major took his leave, promiſing to viſit us the next day. We were now at leiſure to diſcover the conveniencies which he had amply provided for us. Our fellow traveller, Mr. Port, and a ſoldier, of a rank between that of a ſerjeant and a corporal, (called a *pulproperſckack*) were fixed upon to be our male domeſtics. We had alſo a houſekeeper, and a cook, who were ordered to obey Mr. Port's directions in dreſſing us a ſupper, after the Engliſh mode of cookery. In the courſe of the evening, we were favoured with a number of civil meſſages, from the principal inhabitants of the town, politely obſerving, that their attending to pay their reſpects to us at that time, would add to our fatigues, but they would do themſelves that honour the next morning. Such attention and politeneſs, in ſo uncultivated and deſolate a country, formed a contraſt highly in favour of its inhabitants; and, in addition to their civility, at ſunſet, the ſerjeant brought the report of his guard to Captain Gore.

In the morning of the 13th, compliments were ſent us by the Major, Captain Shmaleff, and the

moſt reſpectable people of the town, from all whom we were honoured with viſits ſoon after. The two former having, after we had retired to reſt, enquired of Mr. Port what articles we ſtood in the greateſt need of on board the ſhips; they inſiſted on our ſharing with their garriſon, in the ſmall ſtock of proviſions they had then remaining; lamenting, at the ſame time, that our arrival ſhould happen to be in that ſeaſon of the year, when ſcarcity reigned univerſally among them; the ſloops from Okotſk not being yet arrived with their annual ſupply.

We thankfully accepted the liberal offer of theſe hoſpitable ſtrangers; on condition, however, that we ſhould be made acquainted with the price of the articles we received from them, that Captain Clerke might draw upon the Victualling Office, in London, for the amount. This was refuſed, in the moſt poſitive terms; and, though repeatedly urged, the Major always ſtopped us ſhort, by ſaying, that his miſtreſs would be highly gratified at his rendering every aſſiſtance in his power to the Engliſh, who are her good friends and allies; and that it would give her a peculiar ſatisfaction to find, that, in ſuch remote regions, her dominions had afforded any relief to veſſels engaged in ſuch important ſervices. He added, that he could not, therefore, act ſo contrary to the principles of his Empreſs, as to think of receiving any bills; but, if we

inſiſted

inſiſted on it, we might give him a bare certificate of the articles he might ſupply us with, which he would tranſmit to the court of Ruſſia, as evidence of having performed his duty. All farther acknowledgments, continued he, muſt be ſubmitted to the two courts, but you muſt excuſe me from acceeding to your propoſal.

This matter being adjuſted, he requeſted to be informed reſpecting our private wants, ſaying he ſhould conſider it as offering him an affront, if we applied to any of the merchants, or had dealings with any other perſon except himſelf.

Not being able to make an adequate return for ſuch ſingular generoſity, he had only our thanks and admiration. At this moment, Mr. King recollected, that Captain Clerke had ſent by him a ſet of the engravings to Captain Cook's ſecond voyage, deſiring him to preſent it, in his name, to the commander. Nothing could have been more acceptable to him than this preſent, the Major being an enthuſiaſt in all matters relative to diſcoveries. Captain Clerke had alſo given Mr. King a diſcretionary power, of permitting the commander to ſee a chart of the diſcoveries made in the preſent voyage; and, judging from his ſituation and diſpoſition of mind, that he would be highly gratified by ſuch a communication; though, from motives of delicacy, he had only aſked a few general queſtions on the ſubject,

Mr. King repoſed in him that confidence, which his whole conduct ſo juſtly merited.

He felt this compliment as it was intended he ſhould, and was ſtruck at beholding, in one view, the whole of that coaſt on the ſide of Aſia and America, which his countrymen had been ſo long employed in acquiring an imperfect knowledge of.

Except this mark of confidence, and the ſet of copper-plates already mentioned, we had nothing with us deſerving of his acceptance; for it was hardly worth noticing, that Mr. King prevailed on his ſon (who was quite a youth) to accept of a ſilver watch; and contributed to his little daughter's happineſs, by preſenting her with two pair of ear-rings, of French paſte. He alſo gave Captain Shmaleff the thermometer which he had uſed on his journey, when he engaged to keep a regiſter of the temperature of the air for one whole year, and to tranſmit it to Mr. Muller, with whom he was acquainted.

This day we dined at the commander's, who, ever ſtudious to gratify our curioſity, had prepared variety of diſhes dreſſed after the Ruſſian and Kamtſchadale manner, beſides a number of others in the Engliſh ſtyle. In the afternoon, we took a ſurvey of the town, and the adjacent country. The ſituation of Bolcheretſk is in a low ſwampy plain, extending to the ſea of Okotſk, being about forty miles in length, and of a conſiderable breadth. It lies north of the Bolchoi-reka, (or great

great river) and on a peninſula, which has been ſeparated from the continent by a large canal, under the directions of the preſent commander; which has added ſtrength to it as a fortreſs, and rendered it much leſs ſubject to inundations. The depth of the river, below the town, is from ſix to eight feet, and the breadth about a quarter of a mile. At the diſtance of twenty-two miles, it empties itſelf into the ſea of Okotſk; where it is capable of admitting pretty large veſſels. No corn, of any kind, is cultivated in this part of the country; and the Major aſſured us, that his was the only garden that had been planted. In general, the earth was covered with ſnow: the parts which were free from it, were full of black turfy hillocks. We ſaw about twenty or thirty cows; and the commander had ſix good horſes. Theſe, and their dogs, are their only tame animals: being obliged to keep a great number of the latter, they can rear only ſuch cattle as are a match for them in ſtrength and ſize. For, during the whole of the ſummer ſeaſon, the dogs are turned looſe, to provide entirely for themſelves; and are ſometimes ſo ravenous, that they will even venture to attack the bullocks.

The buildings in Bolcheretſk are all in the ſame ſtyle; they conſiſt of logs of wood, and are thatched. The Major's houſe is conſiderably larger than the reſt, and has three capacious rooms, neatly papered; but the *talc*, which co-

vered the windows, gave them a diſagreeable and mean appearance. The town conſiſts of low buildings, in rows of five or ſix habitations each, connected together by a paſſage extending the whole length of them; having the kitchen and ſtore-houſe on one ſide, and the dwelling apartments on the other. There are alſo barracks for the Ruſſian ſoldiers and coſſacks; a tolerable church; a court-room; and, at the end of the town, a number of *Balagans*. The number of the inhabitants is between five and ſix hundred. A handſome entertainment was given by the Major, in the evening, to which were invited all the reſpectable inhabitants of both ſexes.

We made a private application, the next day, to Fedoſitch, the merchant, in order to purchaſe ſome tobacco; the ſailors having been without that favourite commodity for upwards of a year. This, however, like other ſimilar tranſactions, came immediately to the knowledge of the commander; and, in a very ſhort time after, we were ſurprized to find four bags of tobacco in our houſe, each containing upwards of a hundred pounds; which the Major requeſted might be preſented to our ſailors, in his name, and that of the garriſon under his command. By the ſame conveyance, we received twenty loaves of ſugar, and as many pounds of tea, which they requeſted the officers to accept of; as they underſtood that we were almoſt deſtitute of thoſe articles. A

preſent

preſent was alſo ſent by Madame Behm, for Captain Clerke, which conſiſted of honey, butter, figs, rice, and other articles; accompanied with her beſt wiſhes, that, in his infirm ſtate, they might prove ſerviceable to him. We ſtrenuouſly endeavoured to oppoſe this profuſion of bounty, and were extremely anxious to reſtrain it; fully convinced that they were giving us almoſt the whole ſtock of their garriſon. But the anſwer we received from the Major, on theſe occaſions, generally was, That he had been in diſtreſs himſelf, and he was ſenſible that we muſt now be in that ſituation. The length of time, indeed, ſince we had touched at any known port, appeared to them almoſt incredible, and ſeemed to require the evidence of our maps, and other concurrent circumſtances, to obtain their credit. Among the latter, we ſhall mention a curious fact, which Major Behm related to us this morning, and which he ſaid he ſhould not have known how to account for, but for our arrival.

Among the people of the north of Aſia, it is well known, that the Tſchutſki only have maintained their independence, and reſiſted all the efforts of the Ruſſians to reduce them. The laſt attempt was in 1750, and, after variety of temporary advantages on each ſide, the Ruſſian forces retreated, after having loſt their commanding officer. The Ruſſians afterwards removed their frontier fortreſs, from the Anadyr to the Ingiga,

a river which runs into the northern extremity of the ſea of Okotſk, and gives its name to a gulph, weſt of that of Penſhinſk. On the day of our arrival at Bolcheretſk, the Major had received diſpatches from this fort, acquainting him, that a party of the Tſchutſki had arrived there, with voluntary offers of friendſhip and a tribute. That, on aſking the cauſe of ſo unexpected an alteration in their ſentiments, they had acquainted his people, that two large Ruſſian boats had viſited them, towards the end of the preceding ſummer; that they had been ſhewn the greateſt kindneſs by the people who were in them, and had entered into a league of amity with them; and that, in conſequence of this, they came to the Ruſſian fort, in order to ſettle a treaty upon terms agreeable to both nations. This remarkable tale had given riſe to much ſpeculation, both at Ingiginſk and Bolcheretſk; and muſt have remained utterly unintelligible, had it not been elucidated by us. It was no ſmall ſatisfaction to us, to have thus ſhewn the Ruſſians, even by accident, the beſt method of collecting tribute, and extending their dominions; in hopes that the good underſtanding, which this event has produced, may reſcue a brave people from ſuch powerful invaders.

We were this day engaged to dine with Captain Shmaleff, who, in order to vary our amuſements, entertained us with an exhibition of dancing, in the Ruſſian and Kamtſchadale ſtyle. It

is

is impoſſible to convey an adequate idea of this uncouth exhibition. The figure of the Ruſſian dance, reſembled thoſe of our hornpipes, and conſiſted of one, two, or four performers at a time. Their ſteps were exceedingly ſhort and quick, their feet being raiſed but a very little way from the ground; their arms were hung down cloſe to the ſides, the body being kept, the whole time, erect and immoveable, except when the performers paſſed each other, when the hand was ſuddenly raiſed with an awkward motion. But, if the Ruſſian dance was unmeaning and ridiculous, the Kamtſchadale was infinitely more ſo. The principal aim, in their performances, is to repreſent the clumſy geſtures of the bear, which the inhabitants of this country have frequent opportunities of obſerving in various ſituations. To deſcribe the awkward poſtures, exhibited on theſe occaſions, would appear tedious and unintereſting. In general, however, the body was bowed, and the knees bent, whilſt the arms were employed in imitating the motions of that awkward animal.

Having ſpent much time in our journey to Bolcheretſk, and being informed that our return might, perhaps, be more difficult and tedious, we were obliged to acquaint the Major, this evening, with our intention of departing the next day. We could not think of leaving our new acquaintance without regret; and were agreeably ſurprized,

when the Major promiſed to accompany us, if we would ſtay but one day longer. He told us, that he had made up his diſpatches, and reſigned the command of Kamtſchatka to Captain Shmaleff; having made the neceſſary preparations for his departure to Okotſk, which was ſhortly to take place; but that he ſhould be happy in poſtponing his journey, and attending us to St. Peter and St. Paul's, in order to be ſatisfied, that nothing which could be done to ſerve us, ſhould be omitted.

For the articles which Mr. King had given to the Major's children, he received, the next morning, a moſt magnificent Kamtſchadale dreſs, ſuch as the principal *Toions* wear on the moſt ſolemn occaſions. This habit, as we were informed by Fedoſitſch, muſt have coſt, at leaſt, one hundred and twenty roubles. He alſo, at the ſame time, was preſented with a handſome ſable muff, as a preſent from his daughter.

We dined this day (the 15th) with the commander, who, willing to give us an opportunity of ſeeing as much as we could of the manners and cuſtoms of the country, invited all the principal inhabitants of the town, to his houſe this evening. The dreſſes of the women were ſplendid, after the Kamtſchadale manner. Captain Shmaleff's lady, and the wives of the other officers of the garriſon, were dreſſed in a pretty taſte, partly in the Siberian, and partly in the European mode. Madame Behm, in particular, appeared in a grand

European

European dreſs. The richneſs and variety of the ſilks worn by the women, as well as the ſingularity of their dreſs, was very ſtriking: and the whole had the air of ſome enchanted ſcene, in the midſt of the moſt deſert and dreary country in the univerſe. The entertainments of this night were dancing and ſinging.

As we had fixed upon the next morning for our departure, we retired early to our apartments, where three travelling dreſſes preſented themſelves to our view, made after the Kamtſchadale mode, which had been provided for us by the commander. He came to us himſelf ſoon after, to ſee that proper care was taken in packing up our things. We had, indeed, no inconſiderable load of baggage; for, excluſive of his liberal preſents, Captain Shmaleff, and ſeveral other individuals, ſhewed us many inſtances of kindneſs and generoſity.

On Sunday, the 16th, early in the morning, we were preparing for our departure, when we were invited to take our leave of Madame Behm, in our paſſage to the boats. Already impreſſed with ſentiments of the warmeſt gratitude, for the benevolent and generous treatment we had received at Bolcheretſk, they were much heightened by the affecting ſcene which followed. On quitting our apartments, we ſaw all the ſoldiers and coſſacks of the garriſon drawn up on one ſide; and, on the other, were all the male inhabitants

of

of the town, in their beſt clothing; the whole body of the people joining in a melancholy ſong, which, we were informed, it was uſual to ſing on the departure of friends. Thus we marched till we arrived at the commander's houſe, preceded by the drums and muſic belonging to the garriſon. Here we were received by Madame Behm, accompanied by ſeveral ladies, habited in long ſilk cloaks, lined with furs of various colours; forming a moſt ſplendid appearance. Having partook of ſome refreſhment which had been provided for us, we proceeded to the water-ſide, attended by the ladies, who joined with the reſt of the people in the ſong; and, having taken leave of Madame Behm, after aſſuring her that the ſenſe of the hoſpitality of Bolcheretſk, would be indelible in our hearts, we were too much affected not to haſten into the boats. At putting off, we received three cheers, which we immediately returned; and, on doubling a point, where we laſt beheld our friendly entertainers, they ſtill added to our feelings, by a farewel cheer!

On our return, the ſtream was ſo exceedingly rapid, that, notwithſtanding the utmoſt exertions of our conductors, we did not arrive at the firſt village, Opatchin, till the 17th in the evening, which did not exceed the rate of twenty miles a day. On the 19th, we reached Natcheekin, and croſſed the plain to Karatchin on the 20th. The road was in much better order than when

we

we paſſed it before, as it froze ſmartly in the night of the 19th. We proceeded down the Awatſka river on the 21ſt, and paſſed over the ſhoals, at the entrance of the bay, before it was dark. During the whole of our journey, we were highly pleaſed with the willingneſs and alacrity, with which the *Toions* and their Kamtſchadales aſſiſted us at the different *oſtrogs*. On ſeeing the Major, joy appeared in every countenance; and they were much affected upon being informed that he would ſhortly leave them.

A meſſenger had been diſpatched from Bolcheretſk to Captain Clerke, acquainting him with the nature of our reception; and that the Major intended to accompany us on our return; apprizing him, at the ſame time, of the day he might expect us. We obſerved, with pleaſure, as we approached the harbour, all our boats coming towards us. The men were all clean, and the officers as well arrayed as their wardrobes would then permit them to be. The Major was ſtruck at the healthy appearance of our ſailors, and was ſurprized to ſee that many of them had no other covering than a ſhirt and trowſers, though it actually ſnowed at that very inſtant.

Major Behm had expreſſed an inclination to viſit the ſhips before he landed; but, being informed that Captain Clerke was extremely ill, he thought it would be improper to diſturb him at

ſo

ſo late an hour; it being then after nine o'clock. Mr. King therefore attended him to the ſerjeant's houſe, and afterwards went on board to communicate to Captain Clerke what had happened at Bolcheretſk. He was much concerned to find that, during his abſence, that officer's health was conſiderably impaired; inſtead of growing better, as we flattered ourſelves it might, from undiſturbed repoſe in the harbour, and a milk and vegetable diet.

The next morning, Mr. King conducted the Major to the ſhips; where he was received with every poſſible mark of diſtinction, and ſaluted with thirteen guns. He was attended by the commander of a Ruſſian galliot, two merchants from Bolcheretſk, a maſter of a ſloop, and the prieſt of the village of Paratounca.

Having viſited the captain, and taken a view of the two ſhips, he returned to dine on board the Reſolution. In the courſe of the afternoon, the curioſities which we had collected were ſhewn him, and an aſſortment of each article preſented to him by Captain Clerke. Here we cannot ſuppreſs an inſtance of great generoſity and gratitude in our ſailors; who, being informed of the handſome preſent which had been made them by the Major, voluntarily requeſted that their grog might be withheld, and their allowance of ſpirits preſented to the garriſon of Bolcheretſk; ſaying they knew brandy was extremely ſcarce in that

country, the ſoldiers on ſhore having offered four roubles a bottle for it. We could not but admire this extraordinary ſacrifice, knowing how much the ſailors felt, when abridged or deprived of their grog. Indeed, they never had that article withheld from them but in warm weather, that they might enjoy a greater proportion when it was moſt neceſſary; but this generous propoſal would deprive them of it, even in the inclement ſeaſon we had naturally to expect in our northern expedition. The officers, however, would not permit them to ſuffer by their generoſity, and ſubſtituted, in the room of the ſmall quantity of brandy, which the Major conſented to accept, an equal quantity of rum. A dozen or two of Cape wine for Madame Behm, and ſome other trifling preſents which we were enabled to make, were accepted with great politeneſs. The tobacco was diſtributed the next morning, among the crews of both veſſels; every man that chewed or ſmoked tobacco being allowed three pounds, and the others only one.

It has been obſerved that the Major had reſigned the command of Kamtſchatka, and was ſpeedily to repair to Peterſburgh; and he now expreſſed his willingneſs to convey any diſpatches we might chuſe to commit to his care. Such an opportunity was not to be neglected; and Captain Clerke requeſted him to take the charge of ſome papers relative to our voyage, to the Britiſh

Ambaſ-

Ambaſſador at the Ruſſian court. At firſt, we intended to tranſmit only a conciſe journal of our proceedings; but, after mature conſideration, Captain Clerke was of opinion, that the whole account of our diſcoveries might ſafely be committed to the care of a man, who had given the ſtrongeſt proofs of probity and virtue. Conſidering alſo, that a very hazardous part of the voyage was ſtill to be performed, he reſolved to ſend, by him, the whole of Captain Cook's journal; together with his own, from the death of that commander, till our arrival at Kamtſchatka; and alſo a chart of our diſcoveries. Mr. Bayly and Mr. King alſo determined to ſend an account of our proceedings to the board of longitude. From theſe precautions, had any accident befallen us, the Admiralty would have become poſſeſſed of the principal facts of our voyage. It was farther reſolved, that a ſmaller packet ſhould be diſpatched from Okotſk, which the Major ſuppoſed would reach Peterſburgh by December; and that he expected to arrive there himſelf in February or March.

The Major was entertained alternately in the two ſhips, as well as we were able, the three following days. He departed on the 25th, and was ſaluted with thirteen guns; the ſailors, at their own requeſt, expreſſing their regard for him by three cheers. Mr. King and Mr. Webber attended him, the next morning, ſome few miles up

the Awatſka river, where the Ruſſian prieſt and his family were waiting to bid a laſt adieu to their commander.

On taking our leave of the Major, it is difficult to ſay, whether the worthy prieſt and his family or ourſelves were moſt affected. Though our acquaintance had been of ſhort duration, his behaviour had inſpired us with the higheſt eſteem for him; and we could not part (perhaps for ever) with one, to whom we were under ſuch infinite obligations, without indulging the moſt tender feelings. Excluſive of the ſtores, which might probably be carried to a public account, the value of the private preſents he beſtowed on us, muſt have amounted to upwards of two hundred pounds. But, however extraordinary this generoſity may appear, it was exceeded by his delicacy in conferring favours, and his ingenious endeavours to prevent our feeling the weight of obligations, which he knew we were unable to requite. In ſupporting a public character, and maintaining the honour of his ſovereign, he is ſtill more entitled to our admiration, as he was actuated by ſentiments the moſt noble and enlarged. The ſervice in which we were engaged, he told us, was for the general benefit of mankind; and entitled us to the offices of humanity, and the privileges of citizens, in whatever country we might be driven. That, by affording us ſuch relief as was in his power, he was certain that he was acting agree-

agreeably to the wiſhes of his empreſs; and that he could not ſo entirely forget her character, or his own honour, as to barter for the performance of a duty. Among other things, he ſaid, he made a particular point of ſetting a good example to the Kamtſchadales, who were juſt emerging from a ſtate of barbariſm; that they conſidered the Ruſſians as their patterns, in every reſpect; and that he hoped they would, in future, think it a duty incumbent on them to render ſtrangers every aſſiſtance in their power, and believe it to be the univerſal practice of all poliſhed and civilized nations.

The Major having, ſo far as he was capable, relieved our preſent diſtreſſes, he was not unmindful of our future wants; and, imagining we ſhould not be able to diſcover the paſſage we were in ſearch of, and that we ſhould return to Kamtſchatka; he procured from Captain Clerke, the particulars of what flour and cordage he ſhould want, promiſing to ſend them from Okotſk, to wait our arrival. He alſo preſented the Captain with a written paper, enjoining every Ruſſian ſubject to aſſiſt us to the utmoſt of their abilities.

BRITISH
6 AU 75
MUSEUM

THE END OF THE THIRD VOLUME.